# Renormalization of wave function fluctuations for a generalized Harper equation 

Sarah Hulton<br>University of Stirling<br>PhD thesis

November 2006

## CONTENTS

1. Introduction ..... 12
1.1 The Harper equation and generalized Harper equation ..... 16
1.2 Previous work related to the Harper and generalized Harper equation ..... 16
1.2.1 Derivation of the Harper equation ..... 19
1.2.2 Derivation of the generalized Harper equation ..... 20
1.3 Renormalization Methods ..... 23
1.3.1 General renormalization theory ..... 23
1.3.2 Universality classes ..... 24
1.3.3 Circle map renormalization ..... 24
1.4 Decimation theory and the renormalization equations ..... 35
1.4.1 Renormalization of fluctuations ..... 35
1.4.2 Decimation theory ..... 38
1.4.3 Derivation of renormalization equations ..... 41
1.5 Statement of main results ..... 42
1.6 Organisation of thesis ..... 45
2. Review of previous work ..... 47
2.1 The strong coupling fixed point ..... 47
2.2 Previous work on the Orchid ..... 50
2.3 Previous work on related topics with similar renormalization analyses ..... 54
2.3.1 Strange non-chaotic attractors ..... 55
2.3.2 Correlation in quasiperiodic quantum two level systems ..... 56
2.3.3 Application to billiards ..... 58
3. Renormalization Analysis ..... 60
3.1 Dynamics of zeros and singularities ..... 60
3.1.1 Iterated function system ..... 60
3.1.2 The map $G_{n}$ ..... 61
3.1.3 Shift spaces ..... 62
3.1.4 Evaluation map and partnering ..... 66
3.2 Function-pair spaces ..... 77
3.3 Definition of the renormalization transformations ..... 80
4. Periodic continued fractions ..... 81
4.1 Construction of the map $\mathcal{E}_{n}$ ..... 82
4.1.1 Spectral properties of the renormalization operator ..... 82
4.1.2 Projection operator ..... 83
4.1.3 Construction of the map $\mathcal{E}_{n}$ ..... 90
4.2 The map $\beta_{n}$ and symmetry properties ..... 96
4.2.1 Definition of $\beta_{n}$ ..... 97
4.2.2 Sign dynamics ..... 99
4.2.3 Symmetries of the renormalization strange set ..... 102
4.3 Definition and properties of the renormalization strange set ..... 105
4.3.1 Definition of the renormalization strange set ..... 105
4.3.2 Convergence to the scaled orchid ..... 106
4.3.3 Analysis of the zero set of the initial condition $\left(u_{1}^{1}(x), t_{1}^{1}(x)\right) 108$
4.3.4 Analysis of the zero set of the initial condition $\left(u_{1}^{2}, t_{1}^{2}\right)$ ..... 110
4.3.5 Proof of Theorem 12 ..... 111
4.4 Reformulation in terms of sequence spaces ..... 112
4.5 Numerical study ..... 114
4.5.1 The golden mean case, $\omega=[1,1,1, \ldots]$. ..... 114
4.5.2 Fixed $a$ case $\omega=[a, a, a, \ldots]$. ..... 115
4.5.3 Periodic case $\omega=\left[\overline{a_{1}, \ldots, a_{p}}\right], \mathbf{a}=\left(a_{k}\right)_{k \in \mathbb{Z}}, a_{k+p}=a_{k}$ ..... 119
5. General continued fractions ..... 133
5.1 Number theoretical preliminaries ..... 133
5.2 function spaces ..... 134
5.3 Extension to sequence space ..... 135
5.4 Conjectures ..... 136
6. Discussion and conclusions ..... 140
Appendix ..... 151
A. Continued fractions and number theory ..... 152
A. 1 Introduction to continued fractions ..... 152
A. 2 Convergents ..... 153
A. 3 Quadratic irrationals ..... 155
A.3.1 Reverse periodic continued fractions ..... 156
A. 4 Euclidean algorithm ..... 156
A. 5 The Gauss map ..... 158
B. Dynamical Systems ..... 160
B. 1 Continuous dynamical systems ..... 160
B. 2 Discrete dynamical systems ..... 160
B. 3 Invariant sets ..... 161
B.3.1 Fixed points ..... 161
B.3.2 Periodic points ..... 161
B.3.3 Horseshoe map ..... 162
B.3.4 Solenoid attractor ..... 164
B. 4 Chaos and strange attractors ..... 164
B.4.1 Sensitivity to initial conditions ..... 165
B.4.2 Transitive orbits ..... 166
B.4.3 Density of periodic orbits ..... 166
B.4.4 Strange attractors ..... 166
B. 5 Lyapunov exponents ..... 167
C. Shift spaces ..... 170
C. 1 The shift operator ..... 170
C. 2 Full shifts ..... 170
C. 3 Subshifts ..... 171
C.3.1 Topological Markov shifts ..... 172
C. 4 Symbolic dynamics ..... 173
D. Spectral theory of compact linear operators on Banach spaces ..... 174
D. 1 Banach spaces ..... 174
D.1.1 $L^{p}$ Spaces ..... 175
D. 2 Bounded linear operators ..... 176
D. 3 Compact operators ..... 177
D. 4 Spectral values ..... 177
D.4.1 Properties of the spectrum ..... 178
E. Proof of Lemma 2 ..... 179
F. Construction of the projection operator ..... 183
F. 1 Period 1 ..... 185
F. 2 Period 2 ..... 186
F. 3 Period-p ..... 186
F. 4 General $\omega$ ..... 190
G. Proof of Lemma 5 ..... 192
H. Details of the construction of $\mathcal{E}$ ..... 195
I. Proof of lemma 9 ..... 199

## LIST OF FIGURES

1.1 One dimensional integer lattice. ..... 12
1.2 Wave function $\psi_{i}$ at lattice site $i \in \mathbb{Z}[50]$. ..... 13
1.3 The orchid. ..... 14
1.4 Renormalization strange set for the continued fraction $\omega=$ $[2,2,2, \ldots]$. ..... 15
1.5 The Hofstadter Butterfly [24]. ..... 17
1.6 Arnold tongues [6]. ..... 28
1.7 Devil's staircase [66] ..... 29
1.8 Pairs of maps $(\xi, \eta)$. ..... 31
1.9 Schematic representation of the action of $T$ on $\cup D_{n}[4]$. ..... 34
1.10 The fluctuation $\eta_{i}$ at lattice site $i \in \mathbb{Z}$. ..... 37
2.1 The function $t_{*}$. ..... 49
2.2 The orchid transition diagram [45]. ..... 54
2.3 Period-6 orbit of (2.15) showing $y$ along the $x$ axis ..... 55
2.4 A symmetric barrier billiard and its corresponding barrier function $B(y)$. ..... 59
3.1 The interval $I^{n}$. ..... 61
3.2 The $\operatorname{map} G_{n}$ illustrated for $n=7$. ..... 63
3.3 The domains $V_{0}^{n}$ and $V_{1}^{n}$. ..... 77
4.1 The orchid, $\omega=[1,1,1, \ldots]$ ..... 115
4.2 Fundamental set for $\omega=[1,1,1, \ldots]$ ..... 116
4.3 Renormalization strange set for $\omega=[2,2,2, \ldots]$. ..... 117
4.4 Fundamental set for $\omega=[2,2,2, \ldots]$. ..... 117
4.5 Renormalization strange set for $\omega=[3,3,3, \ldots]$. ..... 118
4.6 Fundamental set for $\omega=[3,3,3, \ldots]$. ..... 118
4.7 Fundamental sets for $\omega=[\overline{1,2}]$. ..... 124
4.8 Renormalization strange set for period $2 \omega=[\overline{1,2}]$. ..... 124
4.9 Renormalization strange set for period $3 \omega=[\overline{1,1,2}]$. ..... 125
4.10 Fundamental set for period $3 \omega=[\overline{1,1,2}]$. ..... 125
4.11 Fundamental set for period $3 \omega=[1,1,2]$. ..... 126
4.12 Fundamental set for period $3 \omega=[\overline{1,1,2}]$. ..... 126
4.13 Renormalization strange set for period $4 \omega=[\overline{1,1,1,2}]$. ..... 127
4.14 Renormalization strange set, $n \equiv 0$, for period $4 \omega=[\overline{1,1,1,2}] .127$
4.15 Renormalization strange set, $n \equiv 1$, for period $4 \omega=[\overline{1,1,1,2}]$. 128
4.16 Renormalization strange set, $n \equiv 2$, for period $4 \omega=[\overline{1,1,1,2}]$. 128
4.17 Renormalization strange set, $n \equiv 3$, for period $4 \omega=[1,1,1,2]$. 129
4.18 Renormalization strange set for period $5 \omega=[\overline{1,1,1,1,2}]$. . . 129
4.19 Renormalization strange set, $n \equiv 0$, for period $5 \omega=[\overline{1,1,1,1,2}] .130$
4.20 Renormalization strange set, $n \equiv 1$, for period $5 \omega=[\overline{1,1,1,1,2}] .130$
4.21 Renormalization strange set, $n \equiv 2$, for period $5 \omega=[1,1,1,1,2] .131$
4.22 Renormalization strange set, $n \equiv 3$, for period $5 \omega=[\overline{1,1,1,1,2}] .131$
4.23 Renormalization strange set, $n \equiv 4$, for period $5 \omega=[\overline{1,1,1,1,2}] .132$
B. 1 Original square $S_{0}$ capped by two semi discs. . . . . . . . . . 162
B. 2 Smale's horseshoe. . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 163
B. 3 Illustration of $H_{1} \cap V_{1}$. . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 163
B. 4 Smale's solenoid map [63]. . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 165
B. 5 Lorenz attractor [39]. . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 168
B. 6 Hénon attractor [21]. . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 169

## ABSTRACT

A renormalization analysis is presented for a generalized Harper equation

$$
\begin{aligned}
(1+\alpha \cos (2 \pi(\omega(i+1 / 2)+\phi))) \psi_{i+1}+(1+ & \alpha \cos (2 \pi(\omega(i-1 / 2)+\phi))) \psi_{i-1} \\
+ & 2 \lambda \cos (2 \pi(i \omega+\phi)) \psi_{i}=E \psi_{i} .
\end{aligned}
$$

For values of the parameter $\omega$ having periodic continued-fraction expansion, we construct the periodic orbits of the renormalization strange sets in function space that govern the wave function fluctuations of the solutions of the generalized Harper equation in the strong-coupling limit $\lambda \rightarrow \infty$.

For values of $\omega$ with non-periodic continued fraction expansions, we make some conjectures based on work of Mestel and Osbaldestin on the likely structure of the renormalization strange set.

## 1. INTRODUCTION

The generalized Harper equation

$$
\begin{aligned}
(1+\alpha \cos (2 \pi(\omega(i+1 / 2)+\phi))) \psi_{i+1}+(1+ & \alpha \cos (2 \pi(\omega(i-1 / 2)+\phi))) \psi_{i-1} \\
& +2 \lambda \cos (2 \pi(i \omega+\phi)) \psi_{i}=E \psi_{i}
\end{aligned}
$$

is a discrete model of electron hopping in an applied sinusoidal potential on a one-dimensional integer lattice, taking into account next-nearest neighbour interaction terms.


Fig. 1.1: One dimensional integer lattice.

In this discrete Schrödinger equation, the variable $\psi_{i}$ is the wave function at lattice site $i \in \mathbb{Z}$ (see figure 1.2), and $E$ is the eigenvalue corresponding to the eigenfunction $\psi_{i}$. The parameter $\omega$ represents the magnetic flux, and $\lambda$, $\alpha$ are interaction parameters. The parameter $\phi$ is the phase, which we set to 0.

The model undergoes a phase transition from electrical conductor to insulator


Fig. 1.2: Wave function $\psi_{i}$ at lattice site $i \in \mathbb{Z}[50]$.
at $\lambda=1$, at which point there is self-similarity of the spectrum eigenfunctions [61]. This critical behaviour is reflected in the localized regime $\lambda>1$, where Ketoja and Satija observe [30] (in the Harper equation case $(\alpha=0)$, and for golden mean flux $\omega=(\sqrt{5}-1) / 2)$ that the exponentially decaying eigenfunctions possess universal self-similar fluctuations which they explain in terms of a universal fixed point of a renormalization operator. For the general case, $\alpha>0$ the renormalization appears to send the system to a universal strange attractor determined by the strong coupling limit $\lambda \rightarrow \infty$, a projection of which is the orchid first obtained in [30] and illustrated in figure 1.3. Mestel and Osbaldestin [45] analyse this set and provide a description of its structure in terms of symbolic dynamics.

Such sets occur for other irrational $\omega$ (for example, figure 1.4) and the anal-


Fig. 1.3: The orchid.
ysis in [45] was extended by Mestel and Osbaldestin [46] to irrationals of the form $\omega=\left(-a+\sqrt{a^{2}+4}\right) / 2, a \in \mathbb{N}$, i.e., those $\omega$ with period-1 continued fraction $[a, a, a, \ldots]$. The aim of this project is to extend this work further to all periodic continued fractions. Since the orbits under the Gauss map of all quadratic irrationals $\omega$ are eventually periodic, i.e., they have periodic tails in their continued-fraction expansions, the theory we develop applies to all quadratic irrationals $\omega$. Our goal in this work is to define a model space for each periodic continued fraction and to construct an embedding of this model space into the space of function pairs on which the renormalization transformation acts. We then demonstrate that the renormalization strange set so constructed corresponds to that observed in the generalized Harper equation, at least up to a scale change. Thereby we present a rigorous structural analysis of the strange sets seen in the generalized Harper equation.


Fig. 1.4: Renormalization strange set for the continued fraction $\omega=[2,2,2, \ldots]$.

It turns out that the general periodic continued-fraction case presents considerable additional complications over the period-1 case, in that we must deal with periodic sequences of function pairs, each defined on separate domains, and many parameters change dynamically. For example, it is no longer possible to confine ourselves to a single invariant interval and code space. Instead we must allow the invariant interval and codes to change at each iteration of the renormalization map (see section 3.1 .3 below). Thus, a complete analysis using the approach in [45] would present considerable difficulties, and consequently such an analysis is not attempted. Instead, we restrict ourselves to the important special case in which not only are the continued fractions periodic, but also the codes defining the orbits of the strange sets. This restriction allows us to define our function pairs on domains for which the renormalization transformations are compact operators
and we may thus use the more elegant techniques presented by Dalton and Mestel in [9] in their study of the strong-coupling fixed point for period-1 continued fractions. Moreover, as the orbits with periodic codes are dense in the code space, our analysis covers a dense subset of the renormalization strange set in function-pair space.

### 1.1 The Harper equation and generalized Harper equation

In this section we give an overview of the Harper equation and generalized Harper equation and we give a derivation of the these equations from the Hamiltonian formulation in quantum mechanics.

### 1.2 Previous work related to the Harper and generalized <br> Harper equation

The Harper equation

$$
\begin{equation*}
\psi_{n+1}+\psi_{n-1}+2 \lambda \cos \left(2 \pi\left(\omega_{n}+\phi\right)\right) \psi_{n}=E \psi_{n} \tag{1.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

(also known as the almost Mathieu equation) was introduced by Harper in [18] as a tight binding model of electrons on a two-dimensional lattice in a transverse magnetic field. See [62] for a recent discussion.

The model has been extensively studied over the years, principally because it undergoes a metal insulator transition when the coupling parameter $\lambda=1$.

Most research has concentrated on the spectral analysis of the model. See [58, 59] for a recent review of this work.

The spectrum of the model has an intricate structure as given by the socalled Hofstadter butterfly, a fractal discovered by Hofstadter in the 1970's [23].


Fig. 1.5: The Hofstadter Butterfly [24].

Hofstadter predicted that the allowed energy level values of an electron in a crystal lattice, as a function of a magnetic field applied to the system, formed a fractal set, that is, the distribution of energy levels for large scale changes in the applied magnetic field repeat patterns seen in the small scale structure. This fractal structure is generally known as Hofstadter's butterfly, and is shown in figure 1.5. Analogous structures have also been found to exist for the energy spectrum of the generalized Harper equation [19].

Further important progress was made by Aubry and André [3] who conjecture the metal-insulator transition at $\lambda=1$, such that, for $\lambda<1$ there is absolutely continuous spectrum, whilst for $\lambda>1$ the model exhibits localization. After many years of work by several authors, a modified version of the conjecture was proved by Jitomirskaya in 1999 [26].

Renormalization analysis of the self-similarity of the spectrum eigenfunctions has been studied by Ostlund and Pandit [52] and others authors [12, 28, 29, 34, 35, 53, 64]. See [61] for a review.

The Harper equation is obtained by only including nearest neighbour interactions in the tight binding model [62]. By including next-nearest neighbour interactions a generalized Harper equation is obtained. In section 1.1 we derive the generalized Harper equation from a Hamiltonian formulation introduced in 1994 by Han et. al. [16]. However, the generalized Harper equation was obtained earlier by Claro et. al. [8] who derived it as a model of an electron in a uniform magnetic field with potential with hexagonal symmetry and obtain the Hofstadter butterfly.

Later Thouless [65] studied the spectrum of the Harper and generalized Harper equation and obtained lower bounds for the measure of the spectrum for rational $\omega$.

### 1.2.1 Derivation of the Harper equation

Recall from the theory of Quantum Mechanics, that the Eigenvalue equation (stationary Schrödinger equation) is given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathcal{H} \psi=E \psi \tag{1.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\mathcal{H}$ is the Hamiltonian operator. For the Harper equation the Hamiltonian can be written in the form

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathcal{H}\left(p_{x}, x\right)=2 t_{a} \cos p_{x}+2 t_{b} \cos x \tag{1.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $t_{a}, t_{b} \in \mathbb{R}$ and $p_{x}=-2 \pi i \omega d / d x$. Expanding the right hand side of (1.4) we have

$$
\begin{align*}
\mathcal{H}\left(p_{x}, x\right) & =t_{a}\left(2 \cos \left(-2 \pi i \omega \frac{d}{d x}\right)\right)+2 t_{b} \cos x \\
& =t_{a}\left(\exp \left(i\left(-2 \pi i \omega \frac{d}{d x}\right)\right)+\exp \left(-i\left(-2 \pi i \omega \frac{d}{d x}\right)\right)\right)+2 t_{b} \cos x \\
& =t_{a}\left(\exp \left(2 \pi \omega \frac{d}{d x}\right)+\exp \left(-2 \pi \omega \frac{d}{d x}\right)\right)+2 t_{b} \cos x \tag{1.5}
\end{align*}
$$

Applying this operator to $\psi(x)$ equation (1.4) becomes:

$$
\begin{equation*}
t_{a}(\psi(x+2 \pi \omega)+\psi(x-2 \pi \omega))+2 t_{b} \cos (x) \psi(x)=E \psi(x) \tag{1.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

where we have made use of the result $\exp \left(\nu \frac{d}{d x}\right) \psi(x)=\psi(x+\nu)$.

If we fix $x_{0} \in \mathbb{R}$ and make the substitution $x=x_{0}+2 \pi \omega_{n}$ we get:

$$
\begin{align*}
& t_{a}\left(\psi\left(x_{0}+2 \pi \omega_{n}+2 \pi \omega\right)+\psi\left(x_{0}+2 \pi \omega_{n}-2 \pi \omega\right)\right) \\
& \quad+2 t_{b} \cos \left(x_{0}+2 \pi \omega_{n}\right) \psi\left(x_{0}+2 \pi \omega_{n}\right)=E \psi\left(x_{0}+2 \pi \omega_{n}\right) . \tag{1.7}
\end{align*}
$$

$\left(\right.$ Here $\omega=\omega_{0}=\left[a_{1}, a_{2}, a_{3} \ldots\right]$ and $\left.\omega_{n}=\left\{\omega_{n-1}^{-1}\right\}=\left[a_{n+1}, a_{n+2}, a_{n+3} \ldots\right].\right)$
Writing $\psi_{n}=\psi\left(x_{0}+2 \pi \omega_{n}\right)$ we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
t_{a}\left(\psi_{n+1}+\psi_{n-1}\right)+2 t_{b} \cos \left(x_{0}+2 \pi \omega_{n}\right) \psi_{n}=E \psi_{n} \tag{1.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

Now making the substitutions $x_{0} \rightarrow 2 \pi \phi, t_{b} / t_{a} \rightarrow \lambda, E / t_{a} \rightarrow E$ gives the Harper equation:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\psi_{n+1}+\psi_{n-1}+2 \lambda \cos \left(2 \pi\left(\omega_{n}+\phi\right)\right) \psi_{n}=E \psi_{n} . \tag{1.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

### 1.2.2 Derivation of the generalized Harper equation

For the generalized Harper equation we replace the Hamiltonian in equation (1.4) by:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathcal{H}\left(p_{x}, x\right)=2 t_{a} \cos p_{x}+2 t_{b} \cos x+2 t_{\overline{a b}} \cos \left(p_{x}-x\right)+2 t_{a b} \cos \left(p_{x}+x\right), \tag{1.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $p_{x}=-2 \pi i \omega \frac{d}{d x}$. The two additional terms correspond to next-nearest neighbour interactions. Then we have

$$
\begin{align*}
2 \cos \left(p_{x} \pm x\right) & =2 \cos \left(-2 \pi i \omega \frac{d}{d x} \pm x\right) \\
& =\exp \left(i\left(-2 \pi i \omega \frac{d}{d x} \pm x\right)\right)+\exp \left(-i\left(-2 \pi i \omega \frac{d}{d x} \pm x\right)\right) \\
& \left.=\exp \left(2 \pi \omega \frac{d}{d x} \pm i x\right)\right)+\exp \left(-2 \pi \omega \frac{d}{d x} \mp i x\right) \tag{1.11}
\end{align*}
$$

To proceed further we need the following result:

Theorem 1. (Baker-Campbell-Hausdorff [15]). For linear operators, $A, B$, we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\exp (t(A+B))=\exp (t A) \exp (t B) \exp \left(-\frac{t^{2}}{2}[A, B]\right) \tag{1.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

provided that $[A, B]$ commutes with $A$ and $B$. Here $[A, B]=A B-B A$.

Applying this result to (1.11) with $A=2 \pi \omega \frac{d}{d x}, B= \pm i x$, and $[A, B]=$ $\pm 2 \pi \omega i$, (which already satisfies the hypothesis of the theorem) and setting $t=1$, gives

$$
\begin{align*}
\exp \left(2 \pi \omega \frac{d}{d x} \pm i x\right) & =\exp \left(2 \pi \omega \frac{d}{d x}\right) \exp ( \pm i x) \exp (\mp \pi \omega i) \\
& =\exp \left(2 \pi \omega \frac{d}{d x}\right) \exp ( \pm i(x-\pi \omega)) . \tag{1.13}
\end{align*}
$$

Operating on $\psi(x)$ gives

$$
\begin{align*}
\exp \left(2 \pi \omega \frac{d}{d x} \pm i x\right) \psi(x) & =\left(\exp \left(2 \pi \omega \frac{d}{d x}\right) \exp ( \pm i(x-\pi \omega)) \psi(x)\right. \\
& =\exp ( \pm i(x+2 \pi \omega-\pi \omega)) \psi(x+2 \pi \omega) \tag{1.14}
\end{align*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{align*}
\exp \left(-2 \pi \omega \frac{d}{d x} \mp i x\right) \psi(x) & =\left(\exp \left(-2 \pi \omega \frac{d}{d x}\right) \exp (\mp i x) \exp (\mp \pi \omega i)\right) \psi(x) \\
& =\left(\exp \left(-2 \pi \omega \frac{d}{d x}\right) \exp (\mp i(x+\pi \omega)) \psi(x)\right. \\
& =\exp (\mp i(x-2 \pi \omega+\pi \omega)) \psi(x-2 \pi \omega) \tag{1.15}
\end{align*}
$$

so that (1.11) operating on $\psi(x)$ becomes

$$
\begin{align*}
2 \cos \left(p_{x} \pm x\right) \psi(x) & =\exp ( \pm i(x+2 \pi \omega-\pi \omega)) \psi(x+2 \pi \omega) \\
& +\exp (\mp i(x-2 \pi \omega+\pi \omega)) \psi(x-2 \pi \omega) . \tag{1.16}
\end{align*}
$$

Now let us assume $t_{a b}=t_{\overline{a b}}$. Then we have

$$
\begin{align*}
& \mathcal{H}\left(p_{x}, x\right) \psi(x)=\left(2 t_{a} \cos p_{x}+2 t_{b} \cos x+2 t_{a b} \cos \left(p_{x}-x\right)\right. \\
&\left.\quad+2 t_{a b} \cos \left(p_{x}+x\right)\right) \psi(x)  \tag{1.17}\\
&= t_{a}(\psi(x+2 \pi \omega)+\psi(x-2 \pi \omega))+2 t_{b} \cos (x) \psi(x) \\
&+t_{a b}(\exp (-i(x+2 \pi \omega-\pi \omega)) \psi(x+2 \pi \omega) \\
&+\exp (i(x-2 \pi \omega+\pi \omega)) \psi(x-2 \pi \omega) \\
&+\exp (i(x+2 \pi \omega-\pi \omega)) \psi(x+2 \pi \omega) \\
&+\exp (-i(x-2 \pi \omega+\pi \omega)) \psi(x-2 \pi \omega))  \tag{1.18}\\
&= 2 t_{a b}(\cos (x+\pi \omega) \psi(x+2 \pi \omega)+\cos (x-\pi \omega) \psi(x-2 \pi \omega)) \\
&+t_{a}(\psi(x+2 \pi \omega)+\psi(x-2 \pi \omega))+2 t_{b} \cos (x) \psi(x)  \tag{1.19}\\
&= E \psi(x) . \tag{1.20}
\end{align*}
$$

Then, dividing by $t_{a}$ and letting $2 t_{a b} / t_{a}=\alpha, t_{b} / t_{a}=\lambda$, and $E=E / t_{a}$, we have

$$
\begin{array}{r}
(1+\alpha \cos (x+\pi \omega)) \psi(x+2 \pi \omega)+(1+\alpha \cos (x-\pi \omega)) \psi(x-2 \pi \omega) \\
+2 \lambda \cos (x) \psi(x)=E \psi(x) . \tag{1.21}
\end{array}
$$

Now if we fix $\phi$ and let $x=2 \pi(\phi+n \omega)$ and $\psi_{n}=\psi(x)=\psi(2 \pi(\phi+n \omega))$ we get the generalized Harper equation

$$
\begin{align*}
(1+\alpha \cos (2 \pi(\omega(n+1 / 2)+\phi))) \psi_{n+1} & +(1+\alpha \cos (2 \pi(\omega(n-1 / 2)+\phi))) \psi_{n-1} \\
& +2 \lambda \cos (2 \pi(n \omega+\phi)) \psi_{n}=E \psi_{n} . \tag{1.22}
\end{align*}
$$

### 1.3 Renormalization Methods

In this section we introduce renormalization methods with the simple example of circle map renormalization and give the sturcture theory of LanfordYampolsky for critical circle map renormalization [68]. Our ultimate aim is to construct a similar theory for the generalized Harper equation. In this thesis we make progress towards this goal by constructing the periodic points corresponding to the horseshoe structure.

### 1.3.1 General renormalization theory

Certain critical phenomena such as the transition to chaos, magnetism to non-magnetism, liquid gas transition etc, have been observed to occur re-
peatedly at many different scales. This observation was the motivation for the technique of renormalization which seeks to explain the structure of critical behaviour and in particular scaling exponents and universal behaviour. Specifically renormalization involves the iteration of a renormalization operator subject to renormalization constants. The system is transformed by aggregating components to form a new system on a different scale and then renormalizing to restore the original scale. The resulting system is one displaying the same interesting phenomena as the original but now encompassing all scales.

### 1.3.2 Universality classes

Renormalization analysis of the action of the renormalization operator on a suitable function space gives rise to quantitative predictions which may be applied to other systems which share some qualitative features with the system under investigation. Such systems are said to lie in the same universality class. In this way simple models can give rise to the derivation of universal constants observed in more complex physical systems within the same universality class.

### 1.3.3 Circle map renormalization

The renormalization group formalism has led to developments in the understanding of the transition to chaos, the best known examples are period doubling cascades and the breakdown of invariant circles in dissipative and
area preserving maps. To introduce the methods involved in renormalization we look first at the illustrative example of circle map renormalization. This section describes some universal properties of critical circle maps with golden mean rotation number. First let us explain what is meant by rotation number.

## Rotation number

Representing the circle $\mathbb{T}$ by the real numbers $\mathbb{R} \bmod 1$ and recalling [1] that every homeomorphism on the circle can be represented by a homeomorphism $F: \mathbb{R} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}$ on the reals such that:

$$
\begin{equation*}
F(x+1)=F(x)+1, \tag{1.23}
\end{equation*}
$$

then the circle homeomorphism $f: \mathbb{T} \rightarrow \mathbb{T}$ may be represented by a homeomorphism $F: \mathbb{R} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}$ on the reals known as the lift of $f$. The rotation number $\rho(f)$ of $f$ can then be defined by:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\rho(f)=\left(\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty} \frac{F^{n}(x)-x}{n}\right) \quad \bmod 1 . \tag{1.24}
\end{equation*}
$$

For homeomorphisms this limit exists and is independent of the choice of lift and the point $x \in \mathbb{T}$.

It is useful to express $\rho(f)$ as the continued fraction

$$
\begin{equation*}
\rho(f)=\frac{1}{a_{1}+\frac{1}{a_{2}+\frac{1}{a_{3}+\ldots}}} \tag{1.25}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $a_{n} \in \mathbb{Z}$ for all $n$. This is abbreviated as $\left[a_{1}, a_{2}, a_{3}, \ldots\right]$. More about continued fractions can be found in appendix A.

## Circle maps

The circle map is a one-dimensional map, mapping the circle onto itself. A prototypical 2 parameter family of circle maps is the Arnold family given by:

$$
\begin{equation*}
f_{\kappa, \Omega}: \quad \theta_{n+1}=\theta_{n}+\Omega-\frac{\kappa}{2 \pi} \sin \left(2 \pi \theta_{n}\right), \tag{1.26}
\end{equation*}
$$

with $\theta_{n}$ calculated mod 1 . The parameter $\Omega$ may be interpreted as a forcing frequency while $\kappa$ controls the amount of nonlinearity. Setting $\kappa=0$ gives the unperturbed circle map:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\theta_{n+1}=\theta_{n}+\Omega \tag{1.27}
\end{equation*}
$$

If $\Omega=p / q, p, q \in \mathbb{N}$ is rational then the rotation number $\rho=\Omega$ and $\theta_{n}$ follows a periodic trajectory since

$$
\begin{align*}
\theta_{n}^{q} & =\theta_{n}+p  \tag{1.28}\\
& =\theta_{n} \bmod 1, \tag{1.29}
\end{align*}
$$

i.e. $\theta_{n}$ returns to the same point after $q$ iterations of the map. If however $\Omega$ is irrational then $\theta_{n}$ never returns to the same point, the motion is quasiperiodic and the points fill the circle densely.

For irrational $\Omega$, increasing $\kappa$ from 0 to 1 gives the transition from quasiperiodicity to chaos as the magnitude of the non-linear term increases. This is the transition we will look at, in particular, how renormalization methods have been used by Ostlund et. al. [51] to explain universal scaling constants obtained in the numerical experiments of Shenker [57].

## Arnold Tongues

As $\kappa$ increases from 0 to 1 a plot of the parameter space, $\Omega$ against $\kappa$, as shown in figure 1.6, reveals tongues that spread out from every rational number, within these tongues the rotation number is rational and corresponds to the value of $\Omega$ at $\kappa=0$. This phenomenon in which rational periodic motion occurs for a finite range of forcing frequencies is known as mode-locking. These mode-locked regions surrounding each rational number are known as Arnold tongues.

The Arnold tongues $A_{p / q}$ corresponding to rotation number $p / q$ are given by:

$$
\begin{equation*}
A_{p / q}=\left\{(\kappa, \Omega): f_{\kappa, \Omega}^{q}(x)=x+p \quad \text { for some } x\right\} . \tag{1.30}
\end{equation*}
$$

At $\kappa=0$ the Arnold tongues are an isolated set of measure zero, they widen upwards to a finite width at $\kappa=1$. At $\kappa=1$ the map has a cubic critical point at the origin which means that the inverse map is not differentiable.

For $\kappa>1$ the tongues overlap and the circle map becomes noninvertible.


Fig. 1.6: Arnold tongues [6].

## Devil's staircase

For $\kappa=1$, the measure of quasiperiodic states (irrational rotation number) on the $\Omega$-axis has become zero, and the measure of the mode-locked states has become 1. A plot of the rotation number $\rho(\Omega)$ against $\Omega$ for the circle map (1.26) with $\kappa=1$ reveals that at almost all values of $\Omega$, the rotation number is some rational. For $\kappa \leq 1$ the rotation number is monotonic in $\Omega$ giving the structure of a devil's staircase being constant on an infinite set of intervals corresponding to every rational rotation and is irrational elsewhere as shown in figure (1.7).


Fig. 1.7: Devil's staircase [66]

Universality

Numerical studies have revealed that circle maps exhibit interesting universal properties, i.e. for large classes of circle maps there exist quantities that are the same for all functions in their class.

Let $|\kappa|<1$ be fixed so that $f_{\Omega}=f_{\kappa, \Omega}$ and let $\Omega_{*}$ be the fixed value of $\Omega$ such that $\rho\left(f_{\Omega}\right)=\Omega$, i.e. $\Omega_{*}$ is the value of $\Omega$ for which the rotation $\rho\left(f_{\Omega}\right)$ is equivalent the fixed rotation $\Omega$. Let $\Omega_{n}$ be the value of $\Omega$ closest to $\Omega_{*}$ such that $\rho\left(f_{\Omega}\right)=p_{n} / q_{n}$, the $n$th convergent to $\Omega_{*}$. If $\kappa=0$ then $\Omega_{n}=p_{n} / q_{n}$ and $\Omega=\Omega_{*}$. In general for $|\kappa|<1$ the following results are given by [22]:

1. If $f=f_{\Omega}$ then $f^{q_{n}}(0)-p_{n}$ decreases as $a^{n}$ where $a=-\Omega_{*}$.
2. $a^{-n}\left(f^{q_{n}}\left(a^{n} x\right)-p_{n}\right)$ converges, up to a scale change, to the rigid rotation

$$
x \rightarrow x+\Omega_{*} .
$$

3. $\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty}\left(\omega_{n}-\omega_{n-1}\right) /\left(\omega_{n+1}-\omega_{n}\right)=\delta$ where $\delta=-\Omega_{*}^{-2}$

## Critical circle maps

A critical circle map is the lift of an analytic homeomorphism with a single critical point that is cubic. For the above two parameter family of circle maps $f_{\kappa, \Omega}$ given by equation (1.26), criticality occurs when $\kappa=1$.

Setting $\kappa=1$ we have that $f_{\Omega}=f_{1, \Omega}$ is critical and numerical experiments of Shenker [57], corresponding to maps with golden mean rotation number, give the following results:

1. $f^{q_{n}}(0)-p_{n}$ decreases as $a^{n}$ where $a=-0.776 \ldots=-\Gamma^{0.527 \ldots}$
2. $a^{-n}\left(f^{q_{n}}\left(a^{n} x\right)-p_{n}\right)$ converges to an analytic function $\xi$ of $x^{3}$ as $n \rightarrow \infty$.
3. $\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty}\left(\omega_{n}-\omega_{n-1}\right) /\left(\omega_{n+1}-\omega_{n}\right)=\delta$ where $\delta=-2.834 \ldots=-\Gamma^{-2.164 \ldots}$, where $\Gamma$ represents the golden mean $(\sqrt{5}-1) / 2$.

Any 2-parameter family satisfying these conditions is said to be in the golden mean universality class. Similar results hold for other irrational rotation numbers with periodic continued fractions.

## Circle map pairs

It is usual to work with an operator acting on a space of pairs of maps. The map of the circle $f$ can be written in terms of a pair of functions $(\xi, \eta)$ as
illustrated in figure 1.8 such that

$$
\begin{align*}
f(x) & =\xi(x) \quad \text { for } \quad \eta(0)<x<0 \\
& =\eta(x) \quad \text { for } \quad 0<x<\xi(0) . \tag{1.31}
\end{align*}
$$



Fig. 1.8: Pairs of maps $(\xi, \eta)$.

Identifying the points $\eta(0)$ and $\xi(0), f$ is a well defined homeomorphism of the circle $[\eta(0), \xi(0)]$ provided it satisfies the following conditions:

1. $\xi(\eta(0))=\eta(\xi(0))$
2. $0<\xi(0)<1$
3. $\xi(0)=1+\eta(0)$ for a circle of length 1 .
4. $\xi, \eta$ are increasing on $[\eta(0), 0]$ and $[0, \xi(0)]$ respectively.

## Renormalization scheme

Following the above numerical findings a renormalization theory was developed to explain these properties. The renormalization explanation given by Ostlund et. al. [51] is as follows.

The action of the renormalization operator on the pair $(\xi, \eta)$ where $\rho(\xi, \eta)=$ $[n, \ldots]$ is given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
T_{n}:\binom{\xi(x)}{\eta(x)} \mapsto\binom{\beta^{-1} \xi^{n-1}(\eta(\beta x))}{\beta^{-1} \xi^{n-1}(\eta(\xi(\beta x)))} \tag{1.32}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\beta=\xi^{n-1}(\eta(0))-\xi^{n-1}(\eta(\xi(0)))$.
To illustrate the action on $T_{n}$ we consider the case $n=1$ then (1.32) becomes

$$
\begin{equation*}
T_{1}:\binom{\xi(x)}{\eta(x)} \mapsto\binom{\beta^{-1} \eta(\beta x)}{\beta^{-1} \eta(\xi(\beta x))} \tag{1.33}
\end{equation*}
$$

with the rescaling $\beta=-(\xi(\eta(0))-\eta(0))$ chosen to impose a suitable normalization condition, e.g. a circle of length 1.

In general this operator sends rotation numbers $\rho=p_{n} / q_{n}$ to $\rho=p_{n-1} / q_{n-1}$ where $p_{n}$ and $q_{n}$ are the rational convergents to $\rho(\xi, \eta)$ as given by the recurrence relations (A.3), with the result that it preserves the golden mean.

## Renormalization analysis

The renormalization analysis [51] is given in terms of two fixed points of $T$ : The simple and the critical fixed points. The simple fixed point determines the scaling behaviour of diffeomorphisms and is the rigid rotation given by the pair of maps

$$
\begin{align*}
& \xi(x)=x+\Gamma  \tag{1.34}\\
& \eta(x)=x+\Gamma-1, \tag{1.35}
\end{align*}
$$

where $\Gamma$ represents the golden mean $(\sqrt{5}-1) / 2$.
This fixed point has a one-dimensional unstable manifold with corresponding eigenvalue $-\Gamma^{-2}$. The presence of this fixed point explains the "simple" scaling observed for sub-critical maps with golden mean rotation number.

The critical fixed point determines the scaling behaviour of circle maps with a single cubic critical point at 0 and is observed in the transition from quasiperiodicity to weak turbulence in dissipative dynamical systems. Mestel [41] proves the existence and hyperbolicity of this critical fixed point for cubic critical circle maps with golden mean rotation number.

Structure of renormalization strange set.

In [4] Lanford conjectured the dynamics of renormalization for critical circle maps of fixed degree $d$ (e.g. cubic). Let us define the renormalization transformation $T(\xi, \eta)=T_{n}(\xi, \eta)$ where the rotation number $\rho$ is given by
$\rho=[n, \ldots]$. Then Lanford conjectures the existence of a renormalization strange set on which $T$ acts hyperbolically with a 1-dimensional expansion and codimension-1 contraction, see figure 1.9.


Fig. 1.9: Schematic representation of the action of $T$ on $\cup D_{n}[4]$.

Yampolsky [68] has proved that this picture is correct when the degree of criticality, $d$, is an odd integer.

Theorem 2. (Lanford-Yampolsky) There exists a set I of degree-d critical circle map pairs in the space of critical circle map pairs which is invariant under the renormalization transformation $T$ and such that the action of $T$ on $I$ is topologically conjugate to a two-sided shift on the symbol space $\hat{\Sigma}$ consisting of biinfinite sequences of symbols in $\mathbb{N} \cup\{\infty\}$ with the left shift map $\sigma$. The conjugacy map $i: I \mapsto \tilde{\Sigma}$ satisfies $i \circ T \circ i^{-1}=\sigma$ and if a pair $\zeta=i^{-1}\left(\ldots, a_{-k}, \ldots, a_{-1}, a_{0}, a_{1}, \ldots, a_{k}, \ldots\right)$, then $\rho(\zeta)=\left[a_{0}, \ldots, a_{k}, \ldots\right]$.

The set I has compact closure $A$ and for any critical circle map pair $\zeta$ with
irrational rotation number, $T^{n} \zeta \longrightarrow A$ as $n \longrightarrow \infty$. Moreover for any $\zeta$, $\zeta^{\prime} \in I$ with $\rho(\zeta)=\rho\left(\zeta^{\prime}\right)$ the distance $d\left(T^{n} \zeta, T^{n} \zeta^{\prime}\right) \longrightarrow 0$ as $n \longrightarrow \infty$.

A more precise statement of this theorem and results on hyperbolicity may be found in [68].

### 1.4 Decimation theory and the renormalization equations

### 1.4.1 Renormalization of fluctuations

Let us commence our renormalization analysis of the generalized Harper equation,

$$
\begin{align*}
(1+\alpha \cos (2 \pi(\omega(i+1 / 2)+\phi))) \psi_{i+1}+(1 & +\alpha \cos (2 \pi(\omega(i-1 / 2)+\phi))) \psi_{i-1} \\
+ & 2 \lambda \cos (2 \pi(i \omega+\phi)) \psi_{i}=E \psi_{i}, \tag{1.36}
\end{align*}
$$

by outlining heuristically the derivation of the renormalization equations using the Ketoja-Satija decimation approach [30, 28]. We are interested in the insulator regime, $\lambda \geq 1$, in the zero-phase case $\phi=0$, and we also take the strong coupling limit, $E \sim 2 \lambda$, with $\lambda \rightarrow \infty$. This regime is characterised by an exponentially decaying wave function $\psi_{i} \sim e^{-\gamma|i|}$, where

$$
\begin{equation*}
\gamma=\log \left(\frac{\lambda}{\alpha}+\sqrt{\left(\frac{\lambda}{\alpha}\right)^{2}-1}\right) \tag{1.37}
\end{equation*}
$$

The reason for taking $E \sim 2 \lambda$ is that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\gamma \sim \log \left(\frac{2 \lambda}{\alpha}\right) \tag{1.38}
\end{equation*}
$$

SO

$$
\begin{equation*}
e^{-\gamma} \sim \frac{\alpha}{2 \lambda}, \tag{1.39}
\end{equation*}
$$

so to ensure convergence we take $E \sim 2 \lambda$ giving rise to the strong coupling limit.

Let us write

$$
\begin{equation*}
\psi_{i}=e^{\gamma|i|} \eta_{i} \tag{1.40}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\eta_{i}$ is the fluctuation at site $i$ shown in figure (1.10). In terms of the fluctuations $\eta_{i}$, the generalized Harper equation (1.1) becomes, for $i>0$,

$$
\begin{align*}
e^{-2 \gamma}(1+\alpha \cos (2 \pi(\omega(i+1 / 2)+\phi))) \eta_{i+1} & +(1+\alpha \cos (2 \pi(\omega(i-1 / 2)+\phi))) \eta_{i-1} \\
& +2 e^{-\gamma} \lambda \cos (2 \pi(i \omega+\phi)) \eta_{i}=e^{-\gamma} E \eta_{i} \tag{1.41}
\end{align*}
$$

We may now consider the strong-coupling limit. Setting $E=2 \lambda$ and using


Fig. 1.10: The fluctuation $\eta_{i}$ at lattice site $i \in \mathbb{Z}$.
equations (1.38-1.39), the equation (1.42) becomes

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{\alpha^{2}}{4 \lambda^{2}}(1+\alpha \cos (2 \pi(\omega(i+1 / 2)+\phi))) \eta_{i+1} & +(1+\alpha \cos (2 \pi(\omega(i-1 / 2)+\phi))) \eta_{i-1} \\
& +\alpha \cos (2 \pi(i \omega+\phi)) \eta_{i}=\alpha \eta_{i} \tag{1.42}
\end{align*}
$$

taking the limit $\lambda \rightarrow \infty$ this gives

$$
\begin{equation*}
\eta_{i-1}+\frac{\alpha(\cos (2 \pi(i \omega+\phi))-1)}{1+\alpha \cos (2 \pi(\omega(i-1 / 2)+\phi)))} \eta_{i}=0 . \tag{1.43}
\end{equation*}
$$

Our goal is now the renormalization analysis for the fluctuations $\eta_{i}$. The analysis is an extension of the decimation method of Ketoja-Satija [30, 28], simplified somewhat by the strong-coupling hypothesis $\lambda \rightarrow \infty$.

Let $\omega \in(0,1)$ have continued fraction expansion $\omega=\omega_{0}=\left[a_{1}, a_{2}, a_{3} \ldots\right]$ and $\omega_{n}=\left\{\omega_{n-1}^{-1}\right\}=\left[a_{n+1}, a_{n+2}, a_{n+3} \ldots\right]$, where $\{\cdot\}$ denotes the fractional part and $a_{i} \in \mathbb{N}$. The denominators of the rational convergents $c_{n}=p_{n} / q_{n}$ to $\omega$ satisfy, for $n \geq 1, q_{n}=a_{n} q_{n-1}+q_{n-2}$, with $q_{-1}=0, q_{0}=1$, and $p_{n}=a_{n} p_{n-1}+p_{n-2}$, with $p_{-1}=1, p_{0}=0$, and we have the important relation:

$$
\begin{equation*}
q_{n-1} \omega-p_{n-1}=(-1)^{n-1} \gamma_{0}^{n}, \quad n \geq 1 \tag{1.44}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\gamma_{0}^{n}=\prod_{i=0}^{n-1} \omega_{i}$.

### 1.4.2 Decimation theory

Following the method of Ketoja and Satija, a decimation may be defined by the relation:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\eta_{i+q_{n-1}}=\hat{t}_{n}(i) \eta_{i} . \tag{1.45}
\end{equation*}
$$

The function $\hat{t}_{n}(i)$ encodes the relationship between $\eta_{i+q_{n-1}}$ and $\eta_{i}$, and thus is an appropriate object to study to understand the fluctuations.

A recurrence for $\hat{t}_{n}$ may be obtained in the following way. Evaluating (1.45) with $i$ set equal to $i, i+q_{n-1}, i+2 q_{n-1}, \ldots, i+\left(a_{n}-1\right) q_{n-1}$, gives the following set of equations:

$$
\begin{align*}
\eta_{i+q_{n-1}} & =\hat{t}_{n}(i) \eta_{i}  \tag{1.46}\\
\eta_{i+2 q_{n-1}} & =\hat{t}_{n}\left(i+q_{n-1}\right) \eta_{i+q_{n-1}}  \tag{1.47}\\
& \vdots  \tag{1.48}\\
\eta_{i+a_{n} q_{n-1}} & =\hat{t}_{n}\left(i+\left(a_{n}-1\right) q_{n-1}\right) \eta_{i+\left(a_{n}-1\right) q_{n-1}} .
\end{align*}
$$

Now evaluating (1.45) with $n$ set equal to $n-1$ and $i$ set equal to $i+a_{n} q_{n-1}$ gives

$$
\begin{equation*}
\eta_{i+a_{n} q_{n-1}+q_{n-2}}=\hat{t}_{n-1}\left(i+a_{n} q_{n-1}\right) \eta_{i+a_{n} q_{n-1}} \tag{1.49}
\end{equation*}
$$

Eliminating $\eta_{i+q_{n-1}}, \ldots, \eta_{i+a_{n} q_{n-1}}$ between these equations, we make use of the recurrence for the $q_{n-1}$, to obtain $\eta_{i+q_{n}}=\hat{t}_{n+1}(i) \eta_{i}$ where

$$
\begin{equation*}
\hat{t}_{n+1}(i)=\left(\prod_{j=0}^{a_{n}-1} \hat{t}_{n}\left(i+j q_{n-1}\right)\right) \hat{t}_{n-1}\left(i+a_{n} q_{n-1}\right) . \tag{1.50}
\end{equation*}
$$

Setting the phase $\phi=0$, and evaluating (1.45) at $n=0$ and $n=1$, we obtain $\eta_{i}=\hat{t}_{0}(i) \eta_{i}, \eta_{i+1}=\hat{t}_{1}(i) \eta_{i}$, which, on comparing with (1.43) at $i+1$, with $\phi=0$, gives initial conditions

$$
\begin{equation*}
\hat{t}_{0}(i)=1, \quad \hat{t}_{1}(i)=\frac{1+\alpha \cos (2 \pi(\omega(i+1 / 2)))}{\alpha(1-\cos (2 \pi(i+1) \omega))} . \tag{1.51}
\end{equation*}
$$

Following [30] we now transform from the discrete variable $i$ to a continuous variable $x$, by writing $x=(-1)^{n}\left(\gamma_{0}^{n}\right)^{-1}\{i \omega\}$ and setting $t_{n}(x)=\hat{t}_{n}(i)$. Then
for $n>1$ we have

$$
\begin{align*}
t_{n+1}(x)= & t_{n+1}\left((-1)^{n+1}\left(\gamma_{0}^{n+1}\right)^{-1}\{i \omega\}\right)=\hat{t}_{n+1}(i)  \tag{1.52}\\
= & \left(\prod_{j=0}^{a_{n}-1} \hat{t}_{n}\left(i+j q_{n-1}\right)\right) \hat{t}_{n-1}\left(i+a_{n} q_{n-1}\right)  \tag{1.53}\\
= & \left(\prod_{j=0}^{a_{n}-1} t_{n}\left((-1)^{n}\left(\gamma_{0}^{n}\right)^{-1}\left\{\left(i+j q_{n-1}\right) \omega\right\}\right)\right) \\
= & \left(\prod _ { j = 0 } ^ { t _ { n } - 1 } t _ { n } \left(\left(-(-1)^{n-1}\left(\gamma_{0}^{n-1}\right)^{-1}\left\{\left(i+a_{n} q_{n-1}\right) \omega\right\}\right)\right.\right.  \tag{1.54}\\
& \left.\left.\left.t_{n}^{n+1}\right)^{-1} \omega_{n}\left\{i \omega+j(-1)^{n-1} \gamma_{0}^{n}\right\}\right)\right) \\
= & \left(\prod_{j=0}^{t_{n-1}\left((-1)^{n+1}\left(\gamma_{0}^{n+1}\right)^{-1} \omega_{n} \omega_{n-1}\left\{\left(-\omega_{n} x-j\right)\right) t_{n-1}\left(\omega_{n} \omega_{n-1} x+\omega_{n}(-1)^{n-1} \gamma_{0}^{n}\right\}\right)} \begin{array}{l}
\left.a_{n}\right),
\end{array}\right. \tag{1.55}
\end{align*}
$$

In deriving this equation we have implicitly used the periodicity of the function $t_{n}$ and (1.44). Using the definition of the variable $x$ and the periodicity of the cosine function, we have from (1.51) the initial conditions

$$
\begin{equation*}
t_{0}(x)=1, \quad t_{1}(x)=\frac{1+\alpha \cos (2 \pi(-\omega x+\omega / 2))}{\alpha(1-\cos (2 \pi(-\omega x+\omega)))} . \tag{1.57}
\end{equation*}
$$

We have therefore reduced the renormalization theory for the fluctuations $\eta_{i}$ to the study of a second-order functional recurrence (1.56) under the initial conditions (1.57).

### 1.4.3 Derivation of renormalization equations

We now reformulate the second-order recurrence (1.56) as a first order operator on function pairs $\left(u_{n}, t_{n}\right)$. Writing $u_{n}(x)=t_{n-1}\left(-\omega_{n-1} x\right)$, we obtain

$$
\begin{equation*}
u_{n+1}(x)=t_{n}\left(-\omega_{n} x\right), \quad t_{n+1}(x)=\left(\prod_{j=0}^{a_{n}-1} t_{n}\left(-\omega_{n} x-j\right)\right) u_{n}\left(-\omega_{n} x-a_{n}\right) . \tag{1.58}
\end{equation*}
$$

Thus we may express the recursion (1.56) in terms of the renormalization operator

$$
\begin{equation*}
R_{n}\binom{u_{n}(x)}{t_{n}(x)} \mapsto\binom{u_{n+1}(x)}{t_{n+1}(x)} \tag{1.59}
\end{equation*}
$$

where

$$
\begin{equation*}
\binom{u_{n+1}(x)}{t_{n+1}(x)}=\binom{t_{n}\left(-\omega_{n} x\right)}{\left(\prod_{j=0}^{a_{n}-1} t_{n}\left(-\omega_{n} x-j\right)\right) u_{n}\left(-\omega_{n} x-a_{n}\right)} . \tag{1.60}
\end{equation*}
$$

From the initial condition (1.57) we get $u_{1}=1$.
It is the operator $R_{n}$ that is the object of our study. It is closely connected to the operators studied by Mestel and Osabldestin and co-workers [45, 46] but differs significantly in that it is dependent on $n$, and thus we are in fact considering a sequence of operators.

Several properties of the operator $R_{n}$ are immediately apparent. First, $R_{n}$ is multiplicative. Consequently, it is convenient to define unary and binary operations and functions coordinatewise on function pairs, so that, for example, multiplication is defined by $(u, t)\left(u^{\prime}, t^{\prime}\right)=\left(u u^{\prime}, t t^{\prime}\right)$. The multiplicative
property of $R_{n}$ can then be written as $R_{n}\left((u, t)\left(u^{\prime}, t^{\prime}\right)\right)=R_{n}(u, t) R_{n}\left(u^{\prime}, t^{\prime}\right)$. We can, at least formally, also define the logarithm of a pair $\log (u, t)=$ $(\log u, \log t)$ in which case $R_{n}$ is a linear operator. It is clear that zeros and singularities of the functions $u$ and $t$ are obstructions to converting $R_{n}$ into a linear operator, and, indeed, the dynamics of $R_{n}$ are determined to a large extent by the zeros and poles of these functions. A further consequence is that the dynamics of $R_{n}$ are dependent on the initial condition (1.57), and in particular on the zero sets and the poles. In fact, the symmetries of the cosine function in the initial condition are important in determining the evolution of $R_{n}$

Our second observation is that $R_{n}$ is determined by the sequence $\left(a_{n}\right)$, which itself determines the sequence of frequencies $\left(\omega_{n}\right)$. Although we are interested in $n$ increasing (or forward iteration), it turns out that for a full analysis that we should take $n \in \mathbb{Z}$, and that backward iteration is important too.

Let us write $\mathbb{N}^{\mathbb{Z}}$ for the space of bi-infinite sequences of positive integers, so that $\mathbb{N}^{\mathbb{Z}}=\left\{\mathbf{a}=\left(a_{k}\right)_{k \in \mathbb{Z}} \mid a_{k} \in \mathbb{N}\right\}$, with left shift operator $\sigma: \mathbb{N}^{\mathbb{Z}} \rightarrow \mathbb{N}^{\mathbb{Z}}$ given by $\sigma(\mathbf{a})_{k}=\sigma\left(a_{k}\right)=a_{k+1}$.

### 1.5 Statement of main results

In this section we give the principal results of the thesis. Our aim is to construct an invariant set in function-pair space comprising the periodic points of a renormalization strange set. Specifically, for a given periodic continued fraction, $\mathbf{a}=\left(a_{k}\right)_{k \in \mathbb{Z}}$, we wish to construct a sequence of sets $\left(\mathcal{O}_{k}\right)_{k \in \mathbb{Z}}$ in a
space of function-pairs such that $R_{k}\left(\mathcal{O}_{k}\right)=\mathcal{O}_{k+1}$ and such that the dynamics on $\mathcal{O}_{k}$ can be understood in terms of a shift map on a symbol space together with dynamics on sign pairs. Furthermore, we require that iteration of the renormalization map with initial conditions corresponding to the generalized Harper equation converges to the sequence of sets $\mathcal{O}_{k}$.

Let us denote by $\mathbb{N}^{\mathbb{Z}, \text { Per }}$ the subspace of $\mathbb{N}^{\mathbb{Z}}$ consisting of periodic sequences, i.e. satisfying $a_{n+p}=a_{n}$ for all $n \in \mathbb{Z}$ for some fixed $p \in \mathbb{N}$ and let $\omega=$ $\left[\overline{a_{1}, \ldots, a_{p}}\right], a_{1}, \ldots, a_{p} \in \mathbb{N}$, have a periodic continued fraction expansion of period $p$. Then, for $k \in \mathbb{Z}$, we set $a_{k}=a_{k} \bmod p$ and $\mathbf{a}=\left(a_{k}\right)_{k \in \mathbb{Z}}$. Thus we may identify $\boldsymbol{\omega}$ with a unique $\mathbf{a} \in \mathbb{N}^{\mathbb{Z}, P e r}$.

The following theorem is the key to the construction of the strange set.
Theorem 3. Let a be a fixed sequence in $\mathbb{N}^{\mathbb{Z}, \text { Per }}$ corresponding to a periodic continued fraction. For each $n \in \mathbb{Z}$, there exists a continuous map $\beta_{n}$ : $\Sigma^{P e r} \rightarrow \mathcal{F}_{n}$ such that for $\mathbf{c} \in \Sigma^{P e r}$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
R_{n} \beta_{n}(\mathbf{c})=L_{b_{n}}(+1,+1) \beta_{n+1}(\mathbf{c}), \tag{1.61}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $L_{b_{n}}:\{+1,-1\}^{2} \rightarrow\{+1,-1\}^{2}$ is given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
L_{b_{n}}\left(s_{n}^{u}, s_{n}^{t}\right)=\left(s_{n}^{t},(-1)^{b_{n}}\left(s_{n}^{t}\right)^{a_{n}} s_{n}^{u}\right), \tag{1.62}
\end{equation*}
$$

and multiplication is carried out coordinatewise. Here $b_{n}=c_{n}+\tilde{c}_{n}$ where $\tilde{\mathbf{c}}=\left(\tilde{c}_{k}\right)_{k \in \mathbb{Z}}$ denotes the partner code to $\mathbf{c}$ (to be defined in section 3.1.4 below), $\Sigma^{\text {Per }}$ is a subspace of periodic codes to be defined in section 3.1.3 below and $\mathcal{F}_{n}$ is the function-pair space defined in section 3.3. The equation (4.63)
generalizes to

$$
\begin{equation*}
R_{n}\left(\left(s^{u}, s^{t}\right) \beta_{n}(\mathbf{c})\right)=L_{b_{n}}\left(s^{u}, s^{t}\right) \beta_{n+1}(\mathbf{c}) \tag{1.63}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\left(s^{u}, s^{t}\right) \in\{+1,-1\}^{2}$ is an arbitrary sign pair. The map $\beta_{n}$ is two-toone in the sense that $\beta_{n}(\mathbf{c})=\beta_{n}\left(\mathbf{c}^{\prime}\right)$ if, and only if, $\mathbf{c}^{\prime}=\mathbf{c}$ or $\mathbf{c}^{\prime}=\tilde{\mathbf{c}}$.

The property (4.63) may be summed up in the following commutative diagram.


Using the maps $\beta_{n}$ we may define strange sets for each $n \in \mathbb{Z}$ as given by the following.

Theorem 4. There exists a sequence $\mathcal{O}=\left(\mathcal{O}_{k}\right)_{k \in \mathbb{Z}}, \mathcal{O}_{k} \subseteq \mathcal{F}_{k}$, such that for all $n \in \mathbb{Z}, R_{n}\left(\mathcal{O}_{n}\right)=\mathcal{O}_{n+1}$. The sets $\mathcal{O}_{n}$ consists of images $\left(s_{n}^{u}, s_{n}^{t}\right) \beta_{n}(\mathbf{c})$ as c ranges over $\Sigma^{P e r}$ and $\left(s_{n}^{u}, s_{n}^{t}\right) \in\{+1,-1\}^{2}$ is a sign-pair depending on $\mathbf{c}$ (to be defined in section 4.3 below).

Our final result concerns the generalized Harper equation itself. We show that for a dense set of initial conditions (corresponding to periodic codes) the dynamics under the renormalization transformation converges to a scaled version of the renormalization strange set. Specifically, we have:

Theorem 5. Let $\omega=\omega_{0}$ have periodic continued fraction expansion $\left[\overline{a_{1}, \ldots a_{p}}\right]$ with period $p \geq 1$, and let $\left(\omega_{n}\right)_{n \in \mathbb{Z}}$ be the associated $p$-periodic sequence
$\boldsymbol{\omega}=\left(\omega_{k}\right)_{k \in \mathbb{Z}}$ with periodic continued fraction $\mathbf{a}=\left(a_{k}\right)_{k \in \mathbb{Z}}$. Then there exist a dense set of $\alpha$ in the range $\alpha>1$ such that iteration of the associated renormalization operator $R_{n}$, for $n \geq 0$, converges to $\mathcal{O}_{n}^{*}$, where $\mathcal{O}_{n}^{*}$ is the set $\mathcal{O}_{n}$ scaled by a function-pair $\left(u_{n}^{*}, t_{n}^{*}\right)$ of period a multiple of $p$.

We prove theorem 1 in section 4.2, theorem 2 is proven in section 4.3, and theorem 3 in section 4.3.5.

### 1.6 Organisation of thesis

In chapter 2 we give an overview of previous work on the Harper and generalized Harper equation, in particular the work of Mestel and Osbaldestin on renormalization analysis of the fluctuations for the generalised Harper equation. In chapter 3 we begin our renormalization analysis for the case of periodic continued fractions. In chapter 4 we construct the map $\beta_{n}$ as given above in terms of $\mathcal{E}_{n}$ also constructed in this chapter and carry out a numerical study. In chapter 5 we consider the case of general continued fractions and give conjectures based on work of Mestel and Osbaldestin on the likely structure of the renormalization strange set. Chapter 6 contains the conclusions of the thesis and a discussion of future work. In appendix A we introduce continued fractions and give some number theoretic results which are useful in the thesis. Appendix B contains an brief overview of dynamical systems while in appendix C we look at shift spaces, and in appendix D give a brief synopsis of the spectral theory of compact linear operators on Banach spaces which we use in the thesis. In appendix E we prove lemma 2 which is
stated in section 4.1.1 and concerns the spectral properties of the renormalization operator. In appendix F we construct the projection operator defined in section 4.1.3 for the periodic continued fractions with period 1,2 , and $p$ and also for the case of a general continued fraction. In appendix $G$ we prove lemma 5 given in section 4.1.3. Appendix H gives the details the construction of $\mathcal{E}_{n}$ which is done in section 4.1.3. Finally the proof of lemma 9 is found in appendix I.

## 2. REVIEW OF PREVIOUS WORK

In this chapter we give an overview of the previous work on the Harper and generalized Harper equation, and, in particular, on the application of renormalization theory to the Harper and generalized Harper equations.

### 2.1 The strong coupling fixed point

In common with the Harper equation, the generalized Harper model (1.1) undergoes a phase transition from electrical conductor to insulator at $\lambda=1$, at which point there is self-similarity of the spectrum eigenfunctions [61]. This critical behaviour is reflected in the localized regime $\lambda>1$, where for $\alpha=0$ and golden mean flux $\omega=(\sqrt{5}-1) / 2$, Ketoja and Satija observe [30] that the exponentially decaying eigenfunctions possess universal selfsimilar fluctuations which they explain in terms of a universal fixed point of a renormalization operator.

The existence of this fixed point was proved by Mestel, Osbaldestin and Winn in [42]. This paper is concerned with the functional recurrences occurring in the study of quasiperiodic systems. In particular they prove the existence of the strong-coupling fixed point for golden-mean renormalization of of fluc-
tuations in the Harper equation, thereby establishing a firm foundation for the work of Ketoja and Satija. Below is a summary of their results:

Let

$$
\begin{equation*}
\phi_{1}(z)=-\omega z, \quad \phi_{2}(z)=\omega^{2} z+\omega, \tag{2.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\omega=(\sqrt{5}-1) / 2$ is the golden mean which satisfies $\omega^{2}+\omega=1$.

Theorem 6. Let $n \in \mathbb{N}$ be given. Then there exists a unique, real analytic, entire function $t: \mathbb{C} \rightarrow \mathbb{C}$ satisfying the fixed point equation

$$
\begin{equation*}
t(z)=t\left(\phi_{1}(z)\right) t\left(\phi_{2}(z)\right), \tag{2.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

with

1. $t(1)=0$
2. $t^{(j)}(1)=0$ for $j=1, \ldots, n-1, t^{(n)}(1) \neq 0$, so that $t$ has a zero of order $n$ at $z=1$; and
3. $t(z)>0$ for $z \in\left(-\omega^{-1}, 1\right)$.

Moreover

$$
\begin{equation*}
t(z)=t_{*}(z)^{n}, \tag{2.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $t_{*}$ is the entire function given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
t_{*}(z)=\frac{1-z}{1-\omega} \prod_{k=1}^{\infty} \prod_{\substack{i_{1}, \ldots, i_{k} \\ i_{1}=1}} \frac{1-\phi_{i_{1}} \circ \cdots \circ \phi_{i_{k}}(z)}{1-\phi_{i_{1}} \circ \cdots \circ \phi_{i_{k}}(\omega)} . \tag{2.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

In addition to existence Mestel et. al. derive properties of the fixed point function as follows:

Theorem 7. The function $t_{*}$ in theorem 6 satisfies:

1. the zeros of $t_{*}$ are the points 1 and $\phi_{i_{k}}^{-1} \circ \cdots \circ \phi_{i_{1}}^{-1}(1)$, where $k \geq 1$, $i_{1}=1$ and $i_{2}, \ldots, i_{k} \in\{1,2\}$ (We note that $-\omega^{-1}$ is of this form.);
2. $t_{*}(\omega)=1, t_{*}(-\omega)=\omega^{-2}, t_{*}\left(\omega^{2}\right)=\omega^{-1}$;
3. $t_{*}$ has a unique maximum at $z_{c}$ on $\left(-\omega^{-1}, 1\right)$ with $z_{c} \in(-\omega, 0)$.

The graph of $t_{*}$ is given in figure 2.1.


Fig. 2.1: The function $t_{*}$.

A Banach space $F$ is defined on which the derivative of the operator

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathcal{R}:(u(x), t(x)) \mapsto(t(-\omega x), t(-\omega x) u(-\omega x-1)) \tag{2.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

acts, and following theorem is proved.
Theorem 8. Let $n \in \mathbb{N}$ and let $t$ be the solution of (2.2) given by theorem 6 .
Let $u(z)=t(-\omega z)$. Then

1. The derivative of $\mathcal{R}$ at $(u, t), L=d \mathcal{R}_{(u, t)}$, is a compact operator on $F$.
2. The spectrum of $L$ consists of 0 together with eigenvalues

$$
\begin{equation*}
\lambda= \pm \omega^{-n}, \pm \omega^{-(n-1)}, \ldots, \pm \omega^{-1},-1, \pm \omega, \pm \omega^{2}, \ldots \tag{2.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

Each of these eigenvalues is simple except for $\omega^{-1}$ which is a double eigenvalue with a one-dimensional eigenspace and further one-dimensional generalized eigenspace.

This work was extended to quadratic irrationals with a period-1 continued fraction in [9], where the methods are also simplified.

### 2.2 Previous work on the Orchid

For the general case, $\alpha>0$ renormalization appears to send the system to a universal strange set determined by the strong coupling limit $\lambda \rightarrow \infty$, a projection of which is the orchid illustrated in figure 1.3. The orchid was first obtained by Ketoja and Satija in [30]. In this paper they study both the Harper and generalized Harper equation in the insulator regime from a renormalization standpoint using their decimation approach.

Writing $\psi_{i}=e^{-\gamma|i|} \eta_{i}$, Ketoja and Satija define functions $f_{n}(i)$ and $e_{n}(i)$ by the relation

$$
\begin{equation*}
f_{n}(i) \eta_{i+F_{n-1}}=\eta_{i+F_{n}}+e_{n} \eta_{i} . \tag{2.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

This is a more general relation than the one we have used in equation (1.45).

The relation used in equation (1.45) corresponds to that of equation (2.7) in the strong coupling limit, but is simpler to analyse. Both lead to the same recurrence (up to a difference in sign). In fact, numerically at least, $f_{n}(i) \rightarrow 0$ and the recurrence for the $e_{n}(i)$ is (up to a difference in sign) our recurrence for the $t_{n}(i)$ in the golden mean case. Ketoja and Satija then introduce a transformation from a discrete coordinate to a continuous coordinate leading to the recurrence for the $t_{n}(x)$.

From numerical experiments Ketoja and Satija make the following conclusions:

- For the Harper equation, $t_{n}(x)$ tends to a fixed point, the strongcoupling fixed point.
- For the generalized Harper equation $t_{n}(x)$ converges to a strange set with the golden-mean orchid projection.
- Periodic orbits in the renormalization strange set have period a multiple of three.

Mestel and Osbaldestin give in [45] the first rigorous results on the orchid, giving the work of Ketoja and Satija a firm foundation. Considering the golden-mean case $\omega=(\sqrt{5}-1) / 2$, they study the renormalization theory for the fluctuations in the wave function in the generalized Harper equation

$$
\begin{align*}
(1+\alpha \cos (2 \pi(\omega(i+1 / 2)+\phi))) \psi_{i+1}+(1+ & \alpha \cos (2 \pi(\omega(i-1 / 2)+\phi))) \psi_{i-1} \\
+ & 2 \lambda \cos (2 \pi(i \omega+\phi)) \psi_{i}=E \psi_{i} . \tag{2.8}
\end{align*}
$$

In [45], the main topic is the study of the recurrence:

$$
\begin{equation*}
t_{n+1}(x)=t_{n}(-\omega x) t_{n-1}\left(\omega^{2} x+\omega\right), \tag{2.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

with initial conditions derived from the generalized Harper equation. This is written in terms of a renormalization transformation:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(u_{n+1}, t_{n+1}\right)=R\left(u_{n}, t_{n}\right), \tag{2.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

where

$$
\begin{equation*}
R\left(u_{n}, t_{n}\right)(x)=\left(t_{n}\left(\theta_{0}(x)\right), t_{n}\left(\theta_{0}(x)\right) u_{n}\left(\theta_{1}(x)\right)\right), \tag{2.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

and $\theta_{0}, \theta_{1}$ are the linear contractions

$$
\begin{equation*}
\theta_{0}(x)=-\omega x, \quad \theta_{1}(x)=-\omega x-1 . \tag{2.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

and $u_{n}(x)=t_{n-1}(-\omega x)$.
The transformation $R$ is studied first of all by understanding the iterated function systems defined by $\theta_{0}$ and $\theta_{1}$, which has an invariant set on the interval $\left[-\omega^{-1}, 1\right]$ with subintervals $\left[-\omega^{-1},-\omega\right]$ and $[-\omega, 1]$. This leads naturally to code spaces: $\hat{\Sigma}$ the subshift of finite type consisting of bi-infinite sequences $\mathbf{c}=\left(c_{k}\right)_{k \in \mathbb{Z}}, c_{k} \in\{0,1\}$, satisfying $c_{k} c_{k+1}=0$, i.e., sequences for which no two consecutive terms of the sequence have digit 1. A partnering operation is defined in terms of blocks of symbols $A=010, B=00, C=01$ by $A \rightarrow A, B \rightarrow C, C \rightarrow B$. Discarding those codes for which there is not a unique decomposition in terms of blocks, a code space $\Sigma$ is obtained.

The principal analytical work in the paper is the construction of a pseudoconjugacy $\beta_{n}$ from a (modified) code space $\Sigma$ to a space $\mathcal{F}$ of function pairs satisfying the equation

$$
\begin{equation*}
R\left(\left(s^{u}, s^{t}\right) \beta(\mathbf{c})\right)=L_{b_{0}}\left(s^{u}, s^{t}\right) \beta(\sigma(\mathbf{c})), \tag{2.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $b_{0}=c_{0}+\tilde{c}_{0} \bmod 2$ and $L_{b}\left(s^{u}, s^{t}\right)=\left(s^{t},(-1)^{b} s^{u} s^{t}\right)$ is a map on signpairs. An analysis of the dynamics of the map $L_{b}$ leads to the following transition diagram (figure 2.2). Here the sign pairs occurring at the start of blocks are enclosed in boxes. The arrows show the possible sign transitions within the blocks $A$ or $B / C$ to the sign pair at the beginning of the next block, which may be $(+1,+1),(+1,-1)$ or $(-1,-1)$, indicated by a box. The sign pair $(-1,+1)$ may be traversed within a block but does not occur at the start of a block. The block to block transitions under the map $L_{b}$ starting with the sign pair $(-1,+1)$ are found to be invariant.

The three-fold symmetry of the orchid transition diagram (figure 2.2) is the explanation for the three-fold symmetry in the orchid (figure 1.3). Indeed, the structure of the orchid is then obtained by combining the dynamics on the code space $\Sigma$ with the dynamics induced on the sign pairs.

Further analysis in [45] shows that for the initial condition given by the generalized Harper equation, the renormalization transformation $R$ converges to the a set $\mathcal{O}$ the projection of which is the orchid. Finally, the authors show that the $\mathcal{O}$ is strange in the sense of Devaney [11], although it is not an attractor, having two non-stable directions in function-pair space. Finally, in


Fig. 2.2: The orchid transition diagram [45].
an analysis of the periodic orbit structure of $\mathcal{O}$ the authors prove a conjecture that all periodic orbits have period a multiple of 3 .

A non-rigorous extension of the orchid work to quadratic irrationals of the form $[a, a, \ldots]$ is provided in [46].

### 2.3 Previous work on related topics with similar renormalization analyses

Functional recurrences of the form (2.9) have application in several other quasi-periodic models in dynamical systems, in particular, in the renormalization analysis of correlation functions.

### 2.3.1 Strange non-chaotic attractors

Feudel et. al. [13] study the model

$$
\begin{equation*}
x_{t+1}=2 \lambda \tanh \left(x_{t}\right) \sin 2 \pi \theta_{t}, \quad \theta_{t+1}=\theta_{t}+\xi \quad(\bmod 1) \tag{2.14}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\xi$ is irrational. To simplify the analysis they study the discrete variable $y_{t}=-\operatorname{sign}\left(x_{t}\right)$. Renormalization analysis of the correlation function of $y_{t}$ : $C(t)=\left\langle y_{n}, y_{n+t}\right\rangle$ leads (for the case $\xi$ the golden mean) to the recurrence

$$
\begin{equation*}
Q_{n}(y)=Q_{n-1}(-\xi y) Q_{n-2}\left(\xi^{2} y+\xi\right) \tag{2.15}
\end{equation*}
$$

but with a discontinuous initial conditions. They exhibit a numerically obtained period-6 orbit as shown in figure 2.3.







Fig. 2.3: Period-6 orbit of (2.15) showing $y$ along the $x$ axis.

Mestel and Osbaldestin [43] study the Multiplicative golden-mean recurrence:

$$
\begin{equation*}
Q_{n}(x)=Q_{n-1}(-\omega x) Q_{n-2}\left(\omega^{2} x+\omega\right), \tag{2.16}
\end{equation*}
$$

for piecewise constant functions and apply the theory to justify the above work of Feudel et. al. [13].

Kuznetsov et. al. [36] study a quasiperiodically forced non-linear systems near the birth of a strange nonchaotic attractor. A renormalization analysis for golden-mean rotation number yields an extension of the golden-mean second-order functional recurrence to a recurrence on two functions $Q_{n}, H_{n}$ :

$$
\begin{array}{r}
Q_{n+2}(y)=Q_{n+1}(-\omega y) Q_{n}\left(\omega^{2} y+\omega\right) \\
H_{n+2}(y)=H_{n+1}(-\omega y)+Q_{n}(-\omega y)^{2} H_{n}\left(\omega^{2} y+\omega\right) \tag{2.18}
\end{array}
$$

It is likely that our methods will be applicable in this case and this is a prime candidate for further work.

### 2.3.2 Correlation in quasiperiodic quantum two level systems

In [14] Feudel et. al. study a two-level quantum mechanical system in a time-dependent field with Hamiltonian given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
H(t)=\frac{1}{2} \omega \sigma_{\chi}+\frac{1}{2} S(t) \sigma_{x} \tag{2.19}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\sigma_{\chi}$ and $\sigma_{x}$ are the Pauli spin matrices

$$
\sigma_{x}=\left(\begin{array}{cc}
0 & 1  \tag{2.20}\\
1 & 0
\end{array}\right) \quad \sigma_{\chi}=\left(\begin{array}{cc}
1 & 0 \\
0 & -1
\end{array}\right)
$$

In the case when

$$
\begin{equation*}
S(t)=\sum_{n=-\infty}^{\infty} R_{n} \delta(t-2 \pi n / \omega) \tag{2.21}
\end{equation*}
$$

and $R_{n}=\kappa \Phi\left(\phi_{n}\right), \phi_{n+1}=\phi_{n}+\Omega(\bmod 1), \Omega$, the golden mean, and $\phi$ periodic or period 1 , the problem reduces to a skew sum mapping

$$
\begin{equation*}
\phi_{n+1}=\phi_{n}+\Omega, \quad \theta_{n+1}=\theta_{n}+\kappa \Phi\left(\phi_{n}\right) . \tag{2.22}
\end{equation*}
$$

Feudel et. al. study the case when $\Phi$ is a discontinuous modulation function and consider the correlation function $K_{B}(t)=\left\langle\cos \left[\kappa Q_{t}(\phi)\right]\right\rangle$ where $Q_{t}(\phi)=$ $\sum_{l=0}^{t-1} \Phi(\phi+l \Omega), \quad Q_{0}=0$. Writing $Z_{m}(y)=Q_{F_{m}}\left(y(-\Omega)^{m}\right)$, they find $Z_{m}$ satisfies the recurrence $Z_{m}(y)=Z_{m-1}(-y \Omega)+Z_{m-2}\left(y \Omega^{2}+\Omega\right)$.

These results are analysed in [44] where Mestel and Osbaldestin study the additive golden-mean recurrence:

$$
\begin{equation*}
Z_{n}(x)=Z_{n-1}(-\omega x)+Z_{n-2}\left(\omega^{2} x+\omega\right), \tag{2.23}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\omega=(\sqrt{5}-1) / 2$, and show the existence of a piecewise continuous period-6 orbit and calculate the correlation function. This work is extended in [47] to the case where $\omega$ is a quadratic irrational of the form $[a, a, a, \ldots]$.

### 2.3.3 Application to billiards

Chapman and Osbaldestin [7] adapt the renormalization analysis of the functional recurrence

$$
\begin{equation*}
Q_{n}(x)=Q_{n-1}(-\omega x) Q_{n-2}\left(\omega^{2} x+\omega\right) \tag{2.24}
\end{equation*}
$$

to the problem of symmetric barrier billiards with golden mean trajectories.

Let $\theta_{x}, \theta_{y}$ be angles corresponding to a point unit mass in the square chamber $[0,1] \times[0,1]$ with time evolution given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
\theta_{x}(t)=\theta_{x, 0}+\omega_{x} t \quad(\bmod 1), \tag{2.25}
\end{equation*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\theta_{y}(t)=\theta_{y, 0}+\omega_{y} t \quad(\bmod 1) . \tag{2.26}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then the problem of the motion of a point mass in a rectangular chamber with a vertical barrier (see figure 2.4) is described in terms of the skewproduct system

$$
\begin{align*}
& \theta_{n+1}=\theta_{n}+\omega  \tag{2.27}\\
& s_{n+1}=s_{n} \Phi\left(\theta_{n}\right), \tag{2.28}
\end{align*}
$$

where $\theta_{n}=\theta_{y}\left(n / \omega_{x}\right)$ is the angle of the trajectory, $\omega$ is the golden mean rotation number, $s_{n}= \pm 1$ is the sign of $x$, and $\Phi(\theta)=B(y)$ where $B(y)$ determines if there is a barrier present at $y$.


Fig. 2.4: A symmetric barrier billiard and its corresponding barrier function $B(y)$.

For irrational rotation numbers they study the behaviour of the sign $s_{n}$ by looking at the autocorrelation function

$$
\begin{equation*}
C(t)=\left\langle s_{n} s_{n+t}\right\rangle=\lim _{N \rightarrow \infty} \frac{1}{N} \sum_{n=1}^{N} s_{n} s_{n+t} . \tag{2.29}
\end{equation*}
$$

They find that the self similarity of the autocorrelation functions can be explained in terms of periodic orbits of the recurrence (2.24).

For the special case of the half-barrier they give a rigorous calculation of the asymptotic values in the autocorrelation function at Fibonacci numbers.

## 3. RENORMALIZATION ANALYSIS

In this chapter we begin our renormalization analysis for the case of periodic continued fractions.

### 3.1 Dynamics of zeros and singularities

The dynamics of the renormalization operator (1.59) depend to a large extent on the zeros of the functions $\left(u_{n}, t_{n}\right)$ contained in the invariant set of an iterated function system (IFS) which we shall now define.

### 3.1.1 Iterated function system

If we let, for $i=0, \ldots, a_{n}$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\theta_{i}^{n}(x)=-\omega_{n} x-i \tag{3.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

then we may rewrite (1.60) as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\binom{u_{n+1}(x)}{t_{n+1}(x)}=\binom{t_{n}\left(\theta_{0}^{n}(x)\right)}{\left(\prod_{i=0}^{a_{n}-1} t_{n}\left(\theta_{i}^{n}(x)\right)\right) u_{n}\left(\theta_{a_{n}}^{n}(x)\right)} . \tag{3.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

Here the functions $\left\{\theta_{0}^{n}, \theta_{1}^{n}, \theta_{2}^{n}, \ldots, \theta_{a_{n}}^{n}\right\}$ form an Iterated Function System (IFS), whose fixed-point set is the interval $I^{n}$, which we refer to as the fundamental interval. The interval $I^{n}=\left[-\omega_{n}-a_{n}, 1\right]$ splits into subintervals $I_{i}^{n}$ given by $I_{0}^{n}=\left[-\omega_{n}, 1\right]$ and $I_{i}^{n}=\left[-\omega_{n}-i,-\omega_{n}-i+1\right]$ for $i=1, \ldots a_{n}$.


Fig. 3.1: The interval $I^{n}$.

### 3.1.2 The map $G_{n}$

We now define the map $G_{n}: I^{n} \rightarrow I^{n+1}$ by

$$
\begin{equation*}
G_{n}(x)=-\omega_{n}^{-1} x-i \omega_{n}^{-1}, \text { for } x \in I_{i}^{n} . \tag{3.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then $G\left(I_{i}^{n}\right)=\left[1-\omega_{n}^{-1}, 1\right]=I_{a_{n}-1}^{n+1} \cup \cdots \cup I_{0}^{n+1}$ for $i=1, \ldots, a_{n}$ and $G\left(I_{0}^{n}\right)=$ $\left[-\omega_{n}^{-1}, 1\right]=I^{n+1}$. The functions $u_{n}$ and $t_{n}$ are then defined on

$$
\begin{equation*}
I_{a_{n}}^{n}=\left[-\omega_{n}-a_{n},-\omega_{n}-\left(a_{n}-1\right)\right]=\left[-\omega_{n-1}^{-1}, 1-\omega_{n-1}^{-1}\right] \tag{3.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{equation*}
I_{a_{n}-1}^{n} \cup \cdots \cup I_{0}^{n}=\left[-\omega_{n}-\left(a_{n}-1\right), 1\right]=\left[1-\omega_{n-1}^{-1}, 1\right] \tag{3.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

respectively. The significance of the maps $G_{n}$ is that they determine the dynamics of the zero sets of $\left(u_{n}, t_{n}\right)$.

### 3.1.3 Shift spaces

Recall that $\mathbb{N}^{\mathbb{Z}, P e r}$ denotes the subspace of $\mathbb{N}^{\mathbb{Z}}$ consisting of periodic sequences, i.e. satisfying $a_{n+p}=a_{n}$ for all $n \in \mathbb{Z}$ for some fixed $p \in \mathbb{N}$. Then for $\mathbf{a} \in \mathbb{N}^{\mathbb{Z}, \text { Per }}$ we define the code spaces

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Sigma=\left\{\mathbf{c}=\left(c_{k}\right)_{k \in \mathbb{Z}}: c_{k} \in\left\{0,1, \ldots, a_{k}\right\}, c_{k}=a_{k} \Longrightarrow c_{k-1}=0\right\} \tag{3.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

This is a space of biinfinite codes of symbols $\left\{0, \ldots, a_{n}\right\}$ with the single restriction that the symbol $a_{n}$ must be preceded by the symbol 0 . The reason for this restriction is as follows. The symbols $0, \ldots, a_{n}$ correspond to the subintervals $I_{0}^{n}, \ldots, I_{a_{n}}^{n}$. The map $G_{n}$ determines the possible transitions between symbols so that the symbol $i$ is permitted to be followed by $j$ if, and only if, $I_{j}^{n} \subseteq G_{n-1}\left(I_{i}^{n-1}\right)$. Since

$$
\begin{equation*}
G_{n-1}\left(I_{0}^{n-1}\right)=\left[-\omega_{n-1}^{-1}, 1\right]=I^{n}, \tag{3.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{equation*}
G_{n-1}\left(I_{i}^{n-1}\right)=\left[1-\omega_{n-1}^{-1}, 1\right]=I_{a_{n}-1}^{n} \cup \ldots \cup I_{0}^{n}, \tag{3.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

we see that only $G_{n-1}\left(I_{0}^{n-1}\right)$ contains $I_{a_{n}}^{n}$, hence the symbol $a_{n}$ must be preceded by the symbol 0 , as claimed. Also note that there are no more restrictions since $G_{n-1}\left(I_{i}^{n-1}\right)$ contains $I_{j}^{n}$ for all $j=0, \ldots, a_{n}-1$. This can be seen in figure (3.2).


Fig. 3.2: The map $G_{n}$ illustrated for $n=7$.

Let us now define the subspace of periodic codes

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Sigma^{P e r}=\{\mathbf{c} \in \Sigma: \mathbf{c} \text { is periodic. }\} . \tag{3.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

It turns out that it is convenient to exclude from $\Sigma^{P e r}$ the periodic codes consisting of all 0 s and the two codes of the form $\ldots 0 a_{n-2} 0 a_{n} 0 a_{n+2} \ldots$ for $n$ odd and even. This is because the partnering relation (to be defined below in section 3.1.4) is not well defined for these three codes since the codes

$$
\begin{equation*}
\ldots a_{-3} 0 a_{-1} 0 a_{1} 0 a_{3} 0 \ldots \tag{3.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\ldots 0 a_{-2} 0 a_{0} 0 a_{2} 0 a_{4} \ldots \tag{3.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

both have partner code

$$
\begin{equation*}
\ldots 00000000 \ldots \tag{3.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

and the partnering is not unique. Henceforth, we assume that $\Sigma^{P e r}$ has these codes omitted.

Let us denote by $\sigma$ the left-shift map, defined for a code $\mathbf{c}=\left(c_{k}\right)_{k \in \mathbb{Z}}$ by $\sigma(\mathbf{c})_{k}=c_{k+1}$.

We now introduce a map $e_{n}: \Sigma^{P e r} \rightarrow I^{n}$ which connects directly the code space $\Sigma^{\text {Per }}$ with the maps $G_{n}$. For $n \in \mathbb{Z}$, let $e_{n}: \Sigma^{\text {Per }} \rightarrow\left[-\omega_{n}^{-1}, 1\right]$ denote the evaluation map at time $n$ given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
e_{n}(\mathbf{c})=-\sum_{k=n}^{\infty} c_{k}(-1)^{k-n} \gamma_{n}^{k} \tag{3.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\gamma_{s}^{t}=\omega_{s} \ldots \omega_{t-1}$. It is straightforward to verify that the following properties of $e_{n}(\mathbf{c})$ hold for $\mathbf{c} \in \Sigma^{P e r}$.

1. $e_{n}(\mathbf{c})$ is a continuous function of $\mathbf{c} \in \Sigma^{P e r}$.
2. $e_{n}(\mathbf{c}) \in \operatorname{int}\left(I_{c_{n}}^{n}\right)$, the interior of the interval $I_{c_{n}}^{n}$.
3. $G_{n}\left(e_{n}(\mathbf{c})\right)=e_{n+1}(\mathbf{c})$.
4. For $\mathbf{c}, \mathbf{c}^{\prime} \in \Sigma^{P e r}$, the equality $e_{n}(\mathbf{c})=e_{n}\left(\mathbf{c}^{\prime}\right)$ if, and only if, $\mathbf{c}=\mathbf{c}^{\prime}$.

The first statement follows immediately from the geometric decay of $\gamma_{n}^{k}$ as $k \rightarrow \infty$. We now prove the second statement, for which we need to use the identity

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{r=1}^{\infty} a_{n+2 r-1} \gamma_{n}^{n+2 r-1}=1 \tag{3.14}
\end{equation*}
$$

(See section 3.1.4 below.) We consider first the case $c_{n} \in\left\{1, \ldots, a_{n}\right\}$. Then

$$
\begin{align*}
e_{n}(\mathbf{c}) & =-\sum_{k=n}^{\infty} c_{k}(-1)^{n-k} \gamma_{n}^{k}  \tag{3.15}\\
& <-c_{n}-\omega_{n}+\sum_{r=1}^{\infty} a_{n+2 r-1} \gamma_{n}^{n+2 r-1}  \tag{3.16}\\
& =-c_{n}-\omega_{n}+1, \tag{3.17}
\end{align*}
$$

where we have used the identity (3.14) and the inequality $c_{n+1} \leq a_{n+1}-1$. Strict inequality follows from the periodicity on $\mathbf{c}$ and $\mathbf{a}$, since $c_{n+1+2 \ell}=$ $c_{n+1}<a_{n+1}=a_{n+1+2 \ell}$ for some $\ell \geq 1$. Similarly, we have

$$
\begin{align*}
e_{n}(\mathbf{c}) & >-c_{n}-\sum_{r=1}^{\infty} a_{n+2 r} \gamma_{n}^{n+2 r}  \tag{3.18}\\
& =-c_{n}-\omega_{n} \sum_{r=1}^{\infty} a_{n+1+2 r-1} \gamma_{n}^{n+1+2 r-1}=-c_{n}-\omega_{n}, \tag{3.19}
\end{align*}
$$

where we have again used (3.14) with $n$ replaced by $n+1$. Strict inequality follows from the fact that $c_{n+2 r}<a_{n+2 r}$ for some $r \geq 1$ since $x_{n+2 r-1} \neq 0$ for at least one $r \geq 1$ and we have excluded codes of the form ( $\ldots a_{n} 0 a_{n+2} 0 \ldots$ ). The case when $c_{n}=0$ is similar, and we omit it for the sake of brevity.

To prove the third statement, we calculate

$$
\begin{align*}
G_{n}\left(e_{n}(\mathbf{c})\right) & =-\omega_{n}^{-1}\left(-\sum_{k=n}^{\infty} c_{k}(-1)^{k-n} \gamma_{n}^{k}\right)-i \omega_{n}^{-1}  \tag{3.20}\\
& =-\sum_{k^{\prime}=n+1}^{\infty} c_{k^{\prime}}(-1)^{k^{\prime}-(n+1)} \omega_{n+1} \ldots \omega_{k^{\prime}}  \tag{3.21}\\
& =-\sum_{k^{\prime}=n+1}^{\infty} c_{k^{\prime}}(-1)^{k^{\prime}-(n+1)} \gamma_{n+1}^{k^{\prime}}  \tag{3.22}\\
& =e_{n+1}(\mathbf{c})  \tag{3.23}\\
& =e_{n}(\sigma(\mathbf{c})) . \tag{3.24}
\end{align*}
$$

This is illustrated in the following commutative diagram.


The fourth statement follows immediately from the previous ones.

### 3.1.4 Evaluation map and partnering

Following [46] we now introduce a partnering operation $\tilde{S}$ on codes in $\Sigma^{P e r}$. The purpose of this operation is to take into account the symmetries of the zeros of the initial conditions (1.57), in particular the reflection symmetry of the zeros of the function $1+\cos 2 \pi x$ about $x=1 / 2$ (the case $\alpha=1$ in (1.57)). The partnering operation is related to the following identities. Recalling the
notation $\gamma_{n}^{m}=\prod_{k=n}^{m-1} \omega_{k}$, the identity

$$
\begin{equation*}
\omega_{n}=\left[a_{n+1}, a_{n+2}, \ldots\right]=\frac{1}{a_{n+1}+\omega_{n+1}}, \tag{3.25}
\end{equation*}
$$

gives in turn

$$
\begin{equation*}
a_{n+1} \gamma_{n}^{n+1}+\gamma_{n}^{n+2}=1 . \tag{3.26}
\end{equation*}
$$

Repeatedly permuting the indices in this equation, multiplying through by $-\omega_{n}$, and adding the resulting equation to (3.26) results in the identities

$$
\begin{align*}
1 & =a_{n+1} \gamma_{n}^{n+1}+\gamma_{n}^{n+2},  \tag{3.27}\\
1 & =\left(a_{n+1}+1\right) \gamma_{n}^{n+1}-\left(a_{n+2}-1\right) \gamma_{n}^{n+2}-\gamma_{n}^{n+3},  \tag{3.28}\\
1 & =\left(a_{n+1}+1\right) \gamma_{n}^{n+1}-a_{n+2} \gamma_{n}^{n+2}+\left(a_{n+3}-1\right) \gamma_{n}^{n+3}+\gamma_{n}^{n+4},  \tag{3.29}\\
1 & =\left(a_{n+1}+1\right) \gamma_{n}^{n+1}-a_{n+2} \gamma_{n}^{n+2}+a_{n+3} \gamma_{n}^{n+3}-\left(a_{n+4}-1\right) \gamma_{n}^{n+4}-\gamma_{n}^{n+5}, \\
& \vdots \tag{3.30}
\end{align*}
$$

which are equivalent to the observation that 1 is a fixed point of the following contractions, which we make use of in the proof of propostion 1 below.
$\kappa_{2}^{n}(x)=a_{n+1} \gamma_{n}^{n+1}+\gamma_{n}^{n+2} x$,
$\kappa_{3}^{n}(x)=\left(a_{n+1}+1\right) \gamma_{n}^{n+1}-\left(a_{n+2}-1\right) \gamma_{n}^{n+2}-\gamma_{n}^{n+3} x$,
$\kappa_{4}^{n}(x)=\left(a_{n+1}+1\right) \gamma_{n}^{n+1}-a_{n+2} \gamma_{n}^{n+2}+\left(a_{n+3}-1\right) \gamma_{n}^{n+3}+\gamma_{n}^{n+4} x$,
$\kappa_{5}^{n}(x)=\left(a_{n+1}+1\right) \gamma_{n}^{n+1}-a_{n+2} \gamma_{n}^{n+2}+a_{n+3} \gamma_{n}^{n+3}-\left(a_{n+4}-1\right) \gamma_{n}^{n+4}-\gamma_{n}^{n+5} x$,

Repeating this process ad infinitum gives the identity

$$
\begin{equation*}
1=\gamma_{n}^{n+1}+a_{n}-\sum_{k=n}^{\infty}(-1)^{k-n} a_{k} \gamma_{n}^{k}=\omega_{n-1}^{-1}-\sum_{k=n}^{\infty}(-1)^{k-n} a_{k} \gamma_{n}^{k} \tag{3.35}
\end{equation*}
$$

which we shall use in the definition of partnering below. A further identity that follows in an analogous manner is

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{r=1}^{\infty} a_{n+2 r-1} \gamma_{n}^{n+2 r-1}=1 \tag{3.36}
\end{equation*}
$$

which may be obtained in the limit from (3.26) by repeatedly advancing the indices in (3.26) by 2 , multiplying through by $\gamma_{n}^{n+2}=\omega_{n} \omega_{n+1}$ and adding.

We now define a substitution operation $\tilde{S}$ on the biinfinite periodic codes in $\mathbf{c} \in \Sigma^{P e r}$ (from which we excluded the periodic code consisting of all zeros for convenience). For a given periodic code $\mathbf{c}$, we have two cases: case (i) all $c_{n} \neq 0$ and case (ii) $c_{n}=0$ and $c_{m} \neq 0$ for infinitely many $n, m$.

In case (i), we note that from (3.6) that $1 \leq c_{n} \leq a_{n}-1$ for all $n \in \mathbb{Z}$. We
may therefore define $\tilde{S}(\mathbf{c})=\tilde{\mathbf{c}}=\left(\tilde{c}_{n}\right)_{n \in \mathbb{Z}}$ by $\tilde{c}_{n}=a_{n}-c_{n}$. It is immediate that $1 \leq \tilde{c}_{n} \leq a_{n}-1$ and $\tilde{\mathbf{c}}$ is again a code in $\Sigma^{P e r}$ with no zeros.

The definition in case (ii) is more complicated. We split the code c into finite sequences which we call elementary blocks and then define $\tilde{S}$ on each of these elementary blocks in turn. As $\tilde{S}$ preserves this elementary block structure, we may recombine the blocks to form the partner code $\tilde{\mathbf{c}}$. The procedure is as follows.

Firstly $\mathbf{c}$ is split into finite blocks beginning with a single 0 , i.e., into blocks of the form

$$
\begin{equation*}
0 d_{0} d_{1} \ldots d_{k} 0^{r} \tag{3.37}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $k \geq 0, d_{j} \neq 0, j=0, \ldots, k, r \geq 0$. Further the trailing run of 0 s is split so that this block is written

$$
\begin{align*}
0 d_{0} d_{1} \ldots d_{k} 0(00)^{(r-1) / 2}, & r \text { odd },  \tag{3.38}\\
0 d_{0} d_{1} \ldots d_{k}(00)^{r / 2}, & r \text { even }, \tag{3.39}
\end{align*}
$$

and thus we subdivide each of these blocks into elementary blocks of the form $0 d, 0 d_{0} d_{1} \ldots d_{k} d$ where $k \geq 0, d_{j} \neq 0$, for $j=0, \ldots, k$ and $0 \leq d$. On these resulting elementary blocks the operation $\tilde{S}$ is then defined as follows. Let us suppose that an elementary block has initial zero starting at index $n \in \mathbb{Z}$, so that, in view of (3.6), we have either a block of length two, of the form $0 d$, where $0 \leq d \leq a_{n+1}$, or a block of length three, or more, of the form $0 d_{0} d_{1} \ldots d_{k} d$, where $k \geq 0,1 \leq d_{0} \leq a_{n+1}, 1 \leq d_{j} \leq a_{n+j+1}-1$ $(1 \leq j \leq k)$, and $0 \leq d \leq a_{n+k+2}-1$. (Note that when $k=0$ we have a
block of length three of the form $0 d_{0} d$.) The operation $\tilde{S}$ can now be defined on the elementary blocks by

$$
\begin{align*}
\tilde{S}(0 d)= & 0\left(a_{n+1}-d\right)  \tag{3.40}\\
\tilde{S}\left(0 d_{0} d_{1} \ldots d_{k} d\right)= & 0\left(a_{n+1}+1-d_{0}\right)\left(a_{n+2}-d_{1}\right) \ldots  \tag{3.41}\\
& \left(a_{n+(k+1)}-d_{k}\right)\left(a_{n+(k+2)}-d-1\right), \quad k \geq 0 \tag{3.42}
\end{align*}
$$

It is straightforward to check that $\tilde{S}$ gives a new elementary block of the same length satisfying the above conditions. The action of $\tilde{S}$ is to take digit complements according to the elementary block structures of lengths 2, 3, $\ldots$. which are

$$
\begin{align*}
& 0 a_{n+1}  \tag{3.43}\\
& 0\left(a_{n+1}+1\right)\left(a_{n+2}-1\right)  \tag{3.44}\\
& 0\left(a_{n+1}+1\right) a_{n+2}\left(a_{n+3}-1\right)  \tag{3.45}\\
& 0\left(a_{n+1}+1\right) a_{n+2} a_{n+3}\left(a_{n+4}-1\right) \tag{3.46}
\end{align*}
$$

For example, suppose $\omega=[\overline{5,5,5, \ldots]}$. We split the code

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathbf{c}=\ldots(011234)(05)(00)(03412330)(00) 051230 \ldots \tag{3.47}
\end{equation*}
$$

as shown. Then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\tilde{S}(\mathbf{c})=(054320)(00)(05)(03143224)(05) \tilde{S}(051230 \ldots) \tag{3.48}
\end{equation*}
$$

Having defined $\tilde{S}$ on each elementary block, all of the elementary blocks are then combined to form a new partner code $\tilde{\mathbf{c}}=\tilde{S}(\mathbf{c})$. This defines a map $\tilde{S}: \Sigma^{P e r} \rightarrow \Sigma^{P e r}$ which is easily seen to be a continuous involution, i.e., $\tilde{S}^{2}=i d$, the identity map. Continuity follows from the observation that in case (ii) for each index $n$ the elementary block containing $c_{n}$ is constant for all codes sufficiently close to $\mathbf{c}$ in $\Sigma^{P e r}$. We note that case (i) can be thought of as a single elementary block stretching to infinity in both directions and, indeed, continuity in case (i) follows from the fact that as a periodic code approaches $\mathbf{c}$ in $\Sigma^{P e r}$, for each index $n$ the elementary block containing $c_{n}$ grows in length to the left and right so the partner code also approaches $\tilde{S}(\mathbf{c})$. It is also clear that $\tilde{S}$ commutes with the left shift map $\sigma$ on $\Sigma^{P e r}$.

We next define the sum map

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathbf{S}: \Sigma^{P e r} \rightarrow\left\{\mathbf{S}=\left(S_{k}\right)_{k \in \mathbb{Z}}: S_{k} \in\left\{1,-\omega_{k-1}^{-1}, 1-\omega_{k-1}^{-1}\right\}\right\} \tag{3.49}
\end{equation*}
$$

the space of biinfinite sequences with terms at index $n$ taken from $\left\{1,-\omega_{n-1}^{-1}, 1-\right.$ $\left.\omega_{n-1}^{-1}\right\}$. The sum map is important because it motivates the reason for the choice of partner operation $\tilde{S}$. For a code $\mathbf{c}$ is case (i) above we set $\mathbf{S}(\mathbf{c})_{n}=$ $1-\omega_{n-1}^{-1}$ for all $n \in \mathbb{Z}$. In case (ii), $\mathbf{S}$ is defined in terms of the elementary block structures given above. Let $\mathbf{c}=\left(c_{k}\right)_{k \in \mathbb{Z}}$ be a code with partner $\tilde{S}(\mathbf{c})$, denoted by $\tilde{\mathbf{c}}$. c and $\tilde{\mathbf{c}}$ are divided into blocks and $\mathbf{S}$ is defined on the elementary block structures (3.43) - (3.46) as follows. Let the first entry in the
block be at index $n$. Then,

$$
\begin{align*}
\mathbf{S}\left(0 a_{n+1}\right) & =1\left(-\omega_{n}^{-1}\right)  \tag{3.50}\\
\mathbf{S}\left(0\left(a_{n+1}+1\right)\left(a_{n+2}-1\right)\right) & =1\left(-\omega_{n}^{-1}\right)\left(1-\omega_{n+1}^{-1}\right)  \tag{3.51}\\
\mathbf{S}\left(0\left(a_{n+1}+1\right) a_{n+2}\left(a_{n+3}-1\right)\right) & =1\left(-\omega_{n}^{-1}\right)\left(1-\omega_{n+1}^{-1}\right)\left(1-\omega_{n+2}^{-1}\right)  \tag{3.52}\\
\mathbf{S}\left(0\left(a_{n+1}+1\right) a_{n+2} a_{n+3}\left(a_{n+4}-1\right)\right) & =1\left(-\omega_{n}^{-1}\right)\left(1-\omega_{n+1}^{-1}\right)\left(1-\omega_{n+2}^{-1}\right)\left(1-\omega_{n+3}^{-1}\right) \tag{3.53}
\end{align*}
$$

extending $\mathbf{S}$ to the whole of $\mathbf{c}$. By construction, we have that $\mathbf{S}(\mathbf{c})=\mathbf{S}(\tilde{\mathbf{c}})$ and $\mathbf{S}(\sigma(\mathbf{c}))=\sigma(\mathbf{S}(\mathbf{c}))$, provided that the biinfinite sequence $\mathbf{a}$ is also left shifted. Again it is straightforward to check that $\mathbf{S}$ is continuous. We have the following result which specifies precisely how $\mathbf{y}=\mathbf{e}(\mathbf{c})$ and $\tilde{\mathbf{y}}=\mathbf{e}(\tilde{\mathbf{c}})$ are related, and explains the terminology 'sum map':

Proposition 1. Let $\mathbf{y}=\mathbf{e}(\mathbf{c})$ and $\tilde{\mathbf{y}}=\mathbf{e}(\tilde{\mathbf{c}})$. Then $\mathbf{y}+\tilde{\mathbf{y}}=\mathbf{S}(\mathbf{c})$, where, the sum is to be calculated termwise.

To prove this proposition, let us consider a bi-infinite code $\mathbf{c}$ and its partner code $\tilde{\mathbf{c}}$, given by the above substitution rules. We write $y_{k}=e_{k}(\mathbf{c}), \tilde{y}_{k}=e_{k}(\tilde{\mathbf{c}})$ and set $S_{k}=y_{k}+\tilde{y}_{k}$. We first of all consider case (i) in which all $c_{n} \neq 0$ for all $n \in \mathbb{Z}$. Then from the definition of $e_{k}(\mathbf{c})$ in (3.13), the identity (3.35) above, and the partnering definition above, we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
S_{k}=e_{k}(\mathbf{c})+e_{k}(\tilde{\mathbf{c}})=-\sum_{k=n}^{\infty}(-1)^{k-n} a_{k} \gamma_{k}^{n}=1-\omega_{n-1}^{-1} \tag{3.54}
\end{equation*}
$$

as required. In case (ii), we proceed somewhat differently. Let us write the
codes in terms of the above block structures, (3.43) - (3.46). Then we claim that if $n \in \mathbb{Z}$ starts a block (i.e., $c_{n}=\tilde{c}_{n}=0$, the first zero of a block), then $y_{n}+\tilde{y}_{n}=1$. Indeed, suppose the block starting at $n$ is of total length $j_{1} \geq 2$. Then from (3.13) we have $S_{n}=\kappa_{j_{1}}^{n}\left(S_{n+j_{1}}\right)$ so that, making use of the identities (3.27) - (3.30) and (3.31) - (3.34),

$$
\begin{align*}
\left|S_{n}-1\right| & =\left|\kappa_{j_{1}}^{n}\left(S_{n+j_{1}}\right)-\kappa_{j_{1}}^{n}(1)\right|  \tag{3.55}\\
& =\gamma_{n}^{n+j_{1}}\left|S_{n+j_{1}}-1\right| \tag{3.56}
\end{align*}
$$

Since the next block, of total length $j_{2} \geq 2$ starts at $n+j_{1}$, we have, similarly,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left|S_{n}-1\right|=\gamma_{n}^{n+j_{1}} \gamma_{n+j_{1}}^{n+j_{1}+j_{2}}\left|S_{n+j_{1}+j_{2}}-1\right| . \tag{3.57}
\end{equation*}
$$

Continuing in this way,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left|S_{n}-1\right|=\gamma_{n}^{n+j_{1}+j_{2}+\ldots+j_{k}}\left|S_{n+j_{1}+j_{2}+\ldots+j_{k}}-1\right|, \tag{3.58}
\end{equation*}
$$

we notice that the $S_{k}$ are bounded and obtain the limit $S_{n}=1$, as claimed.

We now consider $k \in \mathbb{Z}$ within a block. Consider an elementary block structure and let $n \in \mathbb{Z}$ correspond to the start of the block. Now from (3.13) we know that,

$$
\begin{align*}
y_{n+i}=e_{n+i}(\mathbf{c}) & =-\sum_{k=n+i}^{\infty} c_{k}(-1)^{k-(n+i)} \gamma_{n+i}^{k} \\
& =-c_{n+i}+\omega_{n+i} \sum_{k=n+(i+1)}^{\infty} c_{k}(-1)^{k-(n+(i+1))} \gamma_{n+(i+1)}^{k} \\
& =-c_{n+i}-\omega_{n+i} y_{n+(i+1)} \tag{3.59}
\end{align*}
$$

and similarly,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\tilde{y}_{n+i}=-\tilde{c}_{n+i}-\omega_{n+i} \tilde{y}_{n+(i+1)}, \tag{3.60}
\end{equation*}
$$

then,

$$
\begin{align*}
S_{n+i} & =y_{n+i}+\tilde{y}_{n+i} \\
& =-\left(c_{n+i}+\tilde{c}_{n+i}\right)-\omega_{n+i} S_{n+(i+1)} . \tag{3.61}
\end{align*}
$$

If we now consider the elementary block structure $0 a_{n+1}$ of length 2 , we have

$$
\begin{align*}
S_{n} & =-\left(c_{n}+\tilde{c}_{n}\right)-\omega_{n} S_{n+1} \\
& =-\omega_{n} S_{n+1}, \tag{3.62}
\end{align*}
$$

then if $S_{n}=1$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
S_{n+1}=-\omega_{n}^{-1} . \tag{3.63}
\end{equation*}
$$

Thus $\mathbf{S}\left(0 a_{n+1}\right)=1\left(-\omega_{n}^{-1}\right)$ corresponds to the sum $\mathbf{y}+\tilde{\mathbf{y}}$ on the block.
Similarly, for the elementary block structure $0\left(a_{n+1}+1\right)\left(a_{n+2}-1\right)$ of length

3 we have, again, $S_{n}=1$, and $S_{n+1}=-\omega_{n}^{-1}$, where now

$$
\begin{equation*}
S_{n+1}=-\left(c_{n+1}+\tilde{c}_{n+1}\right)-\omega_{n+1} S_{n+2}, \tag{3.64}
\end{equation*}
$$

which implies

$$
\begin{equation*}
-\omega_{n}^{-1}=-\left(a_{n+1}+1\right)-\omega_{n+1} S_{n+2} \tag{3.65}
\end{equation*}
$$

so that, using (3.25)

$$
\begin{equation*}
S_{n+2}=1-\omega_{n+1}^{-1}, \tag{3.66}
\end{equation*}
$$

and $\mathbf{S}\left(0\left(a_{n+1}+1\right)\left(a_{n+2}-1\right)\right)=1\left(-\omega_{n}^{-1}\right)\left(1-\omega_{n+1}^{-1}\right)$ corresponds again to the $\operatorname{sum} \mathbf{y}+\tilde{\mathbf{y}}$ on the block.

Finally, for an elementary block structure $0\left(a_{n+1}+1\right) a_{n+i}^{j}\left(a_{n+2+j}-1\right)$ with $i=2, \ldots, j+1$ of length $j+3$ for $j \geq 1$, we have again, $S_{n}=1, S_{n+1}=-\omega_{n}^{-1}$, $S_{n+2}=1-\omega_{n+1}^{-1}$, and

$$
\begin{equation*}
S_{n+i}=-\left(c_{n+i}+\tilde{c}_{n+i}\right)-\omega_{n+i} S_{n+(i+1)}, \tag{3.67}
\end{equation*}
$$

which implies

$$
\begin{equation*}
1-\omega_{n+(i-1)}^{-1}=-\left(a_{n+i}+1\right)-\omega_{n+i} S_{n+(i+1)} \tag{3.68}
\end{equation*}
$$

so that

$$
\begin{equation*}
S_{n+(i+1)}=1-\omega_{n+i}^{-1}, \tag{3.69}
\end{equation*}
$$

and similarly for the final block,

$$
\begin{equation*}
S_{n+j+1}=1-\omega_{n+j}^{-1}=-a_{n+j+1}-\omega_{n+j+1} S_{n+2+j}, \tag{3.70}
\end{equation*}
$$

which implies

$$
\begin{equation*}
S_{n+2+j}=1-\omega_{n+j+1}^{-1} . \tag{3.71}
\end{equation*}
$$

Giving,
$\mathbf{S}\left(0\left(a_{n+1}+1\right) a_{n+i}^{j}\left(a_{n+2+j}-1\right)\right)=1\left(-\omega_{n}^{-1}\right)\left(1-\omega_{n+1}^{-1}\right)\left(1-\omega_{n+2}^{-1}\right) \ldots\left(1-\omega_{n+j+1}^{-1}\right)$.

This completes the proof of the proposition.
Let us now explain briefly the significance of these definitions for the problem in hand. The function $t_{1}(x)$ in the initial conditions (1.57) has two zeros whose sum is either 1 or $1-\omega_{0}^{-1}$ corresponding to either the start or the middle of an elementary block defined above (see section ?? below). Thus when we map $\Sigma^{P e r}$ into the function-pair space $\mathcal{F}_{n}$ at index $n$, we make use of the partnering operator to obtain a zero set for the resulting function pair that correspond to that of $t_{1}$.

### 3.2 Function-pair spaces

In order to give a precise definition of the function space and of the renormalization transformation $R_{n}$, we must specify the domains of the functions $U$ and $T$. Let $\mathbf{a}=\left(a_{k}\right)_{k \in \mathbb{Z}}$ and the corresponding $\boldsymbol{\omega}=\left(\omega_{k}\right)_{k \in \mathbb{Z}}$ be fixed.

For $c^{n} \in \mathbb{C}$ and $r^{n}>0$, let $D\left(c^{n}, r^{n}\right)$ denote the disc centered at $c^{n}$ with radius $r^{n}$. Let $V_{1}^{n}=D\left(c_{1}^{n}, r_{1}^{n}\right)$ and $V_{0}^{n}=D\left(c_{0}^{n}, r_{0}^{n}\right)$ be the discs in $\mathbb{C}$ where

$$
\begin{equation*}
c_{0}^{n}=1-\frac{\omega_{n-1}^{-1}}{2}, \quad r_{0}^{n}=\frac{\omega_{n-1}^{-1}}{2}+\delta, \quad c_{1}^{n}=\frac{1}{2}-\omega_{n-1}^{-1}, \quad r_{1}^{n}=\frac{1}{2}+\delta, \tag{3.73}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\delta>0$, as illustrated in figure 3.3.


Fig. 3.3: The domains $V_{0}^{n}$ and $V_{1}^{n}$.

The choice of $\delta>0$ is dependent on the particular code $\mathbf{c} \in \Sigma^{P e r}$ for which we construct $\mathcal{E}_{n}(\mathbf{c})$ such that $\beta_{n}(\mathbf{c})=\mathcal{E}_{n}(\mathbf{c}) \mathcal{E}_{n}(\tilde{\mathbf{c}})$ in section (4.1.3) below. Indeed for a given $\mathbf{c}$ the values of $y_{n}=e_{n}(\mathbf{c})$ and $\tilde{y}_{n}=e_{n}(\tilde{\mathbf{c}})$ form periodic sequences, which (as we have seen in section 3.1 above) are bounded away from the boundaries of the intervals $I_{j}^{n}$. Let us choose $\delta=\delta(\mathbf{c})$ so that the
distance of each of the points $y_{n}$ and $\tilde{y}_{n}$ is bounded away from $\partial V_{0}^{n}$ and $\partial V_{1}^{n}$ by at least $\delta>0$. It is clear that such a choice of $\delta$ is always possible and that $\delta(\mathbf{c})$ may be chosen to be locally constant, i.e., there is a neighbourhood $N$ of $\mathbf{c}$ in $\Sigma^{P e r}$ such that $\delta$ is constant on $N$. Unfortunately, $\Sigma^{P e r}$ is not compact so that it is not possible to choose $\delta$ independently of $\mathbf{c}$ on the whole of $\Sigma^{P e r}$. Our approach is therefore to define $\mathcal{E}_{n}$ locally and then to patch together the local definitions to obtain a map defined on the whole of $\Sigma^{P e r}$. Since $\delta$ may be arbitrarily small the final construction is a map from $\Sigma^{P e r}$ to the function space obtained by taking $\delta=0$.

Letting $\delta>0$, we now prove the following set inclusions, which show that the operator $R_{n}$ is so-called analyticity improving.

Lemma 1. The following inclusions hold for all $\delta>0$.

$$
\begin{align*}
& \overline{\theta_{0}^{n}\left(V_{1}^{n+1}\right)} \subseteq V_{0}^{n}  \tag{3.74}\\
& \overline{\theta_{i}^{n}\left(V_{0}^{n+1}\right)} \subseteq V_{0}^{n}, \quad i=0, \ldots, a_{n}-1,  \tag{3.75}\\
& \overline{\theta_{a_{n}}^{n}\left(V_{0}^{n+1}\right)} \subseteq V_{1}^{n} . \tag{3.76}
\end{align*}
$$

Proof. Since $\theta_{0}^{n}$ is a similarity it is sufficient to show that $\theta_{0}^{n}$ maps the end points of a diameter of $V_{1}^{n+1}$ inside $V_{0}^{n}$. Now, $D V_{1}^{n+1}=\left[-\delta-\omega_{n}^{-1}, 1-\omega_{n}^{-1}+\delta\right]$ is a diameter of $V_{1}^{n+1}$, and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\theta_{0}^{n}\left(D V_{1}^{n+1}\right)=\left[-\omega_{n}+1-\omega_{n} \delta, 1+\delta \omega_{n}\right] \subset\left(1-\omega_{n-1}^{-1}-\delta, 1+\delta\right) \subseteq V_{0}^{n} \tag{3.77}
\end{equation*}
$$

(using $\omega_{n-1}^{-1}=\omega_{n}+a_{n}$ ), so that equation (3.74) holds.

Similarly, for $i=0, \ldots, a_{n}-1, D V_{0}^{n+1}=\left[1-\omega_{n}^{-1}-\delta, 1+\delta\right]$ is a diameter of $V_{0}^{n+1}$ and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\theta_{i}^{n}\left(\left[1-\omega_{n}^{-1}-\delta, 1+\delta\right]\right)=\left[-\omega_{n}-\omega_{n} \delta-i, 1-\omega_{n}+\omega_{n} \delta-i\right], \tag{3.78}
\end{equation*}
$$

so that

$$
\begin{align*}
\theta_{0}^{n}\left(D V_{0}^{n+1}\right) \cup \ldots \cup \theta_{a_{n}-1}^{n}\left(D V_{0}^{n+1}\right) & =\left[-\omega_{n}-\omega_{n} \delta-\left(a_{n}-1\right), 1-\omega_{n}+\omega_{n} \delta\right] \\
& \subseteq\left(1-\omega_{n}-a_{n}-\delta, 1+\delta\right) \subseteq V_{0}^{n} \tag{3.79}
\end{align*}
$$

and again we can conclude that equation (3.75) also holds.
Finally for (3.76):

$$
\begin{align*}
\theta_{a_{n}}^{n}\left(D V_{0}^{n+1}\right) & =\left[-\omega_{n}-\omega_{n} \delta-a_{n}, 1-\omega_{n}+\omega_{n} \delta-a_{n}\right]  \tag{3.80}\\
& \subseteq\left(-\omega_{n-1}^{-1}-\delta, 1-\omega_{n-1}^{-1}+\delta\right)  \tag{3.81}\\
& \subseteq V_{1}^{n} . \tag{3.82}
\end{align*}
$$

### 3.3 Definition of the renormalization transformations

We may now formally define the renormalization maps $R_{n}$ and related additive versions:

$$
\begin{align*}
R_{n}(u(x), t(x)) & =\left(t\left(\theta_{0}^{n}(x)\right),\left(\prod_{i=0}^{a_{n}-1} t\left(\theta_{i}^{n}(x)\right)\right) u\left(\theta_{a_{n}}^{n}(x)\right)\right)  \tag{3.83}\\
R_{0, n}(U(x), T(x)) & =\left(T\left(\theta_{0}^{n}(x)\right),\left(\sum_{i=0}^{a_{n}-1} T\left(\theta_{i}^{n}(x)\right)\right)+U\left(\theta_{a_{n}}^{n}(x)\right)\right) \tag{3.84}
\end{align*}
$$

where $\theta_{i}^{n}(x)=-\omega_{n} x-i$.
For $\delta>0$, we define the function space:

$$
\begin{align*}
\mathcal{F}_{n}^{\delta}=\left\{(U, T): U: V_{1}^{n}\right. & \rightarrow \mathbb{C}, T: V_{0}^{n} \rightarrow \mathbb{C}, \quad U, T \text { real analytic } \\
& \text { and } \left.\|(U, T)\|=\|U\|_{1}+\|T\|_{1}<\infty\right\} \tag{3.85}
\end{align*}
$$

so that we have from Lemma 1

$$
\begin{equation*}
R_{n}: \mathcal{F}_{n}^{\delta} \rightarrow \mathcal{F}_{n+1}^{\delta}, \quad R_{0, n}: \mathcal{F}_{n}^{\delta} \rightarrow \mathcal{F}_{n+1}^{\delta} \tag{3.86}
\end{equation*}
$$

We also have $R_{n}(\exp (U, T))=\exp \left(R_{0, n}(U, T)\right)$, with $\exp$ defined coordinatewise. For the case a periodic with period $p$, say, it follows that $\mathcal{F}_{n+p}^{\delta}=\mathcal{F}_{n}^{\delta}$ for all $n \in \mathbb{Z}$. Let us denote by $\mathcal{F}_{n}$ the function space obtained by setting $\delta=0$. It is clear from the above inclusions that $R_{n}$ is well defined on $\mathcal{F}_{n}$ and we also have that $\mathcal{F}_{n}^{\delta}$ may be continuously embedded in $\mathcal{F}_{n}$.

## 4. PERIODIC CONTINUED FRACTIONS

In this chapter we shall be concerned with periodic continued fractions, although much of the theory applies in the more general case.

Let $\omega=\left[\overline{a_{1}, \ldots, a_{p}}\right], a_{1}, \ldots, a_{p} \in \mathbb{N}$, have a periodic continued fraction expansion of period $p$. Then, for $k \in \mathbb{Z}$, we set $a_{k}=a_{k} \bmod { }_{p}$ and $\mathbf{a}=\left(a_{k}\right)_{k \in \mathbb{Z}}$. Thus we may identify $\boldsymbol{\omega}$ with a unique $\mathbf{a} \in \mathbb{N}^{\mathbb{Z}, P e r}$. In what follows we shall restrict to this fixed sequence $\mathbf{a}$ with period $p \geq 1$ so that $a_{n+p}=a_{n}$ for all $n$. We further set, for $k \in \mathbb{Z}, \omega_{k}=\left[\overline{a_{k+1}, \ldots, a_{k+p}}\right]$, and let $\boldsymbol{\omega}=\left(\omega_{k}\right)_{k \in \mathbb{Z}}$. For $k \in \mathbb{Z}$, we also define $V_{0}^{k}, V_{1}^{k}$ to be the domains in $\mathbb{C}$ given in section 3.2 above. Let us also set a code space $\Sigma=\left\{\mathbf{c} \in\left(c_{k}\right)_{k \in \mathbb{Z}} \mid c_{k} \in\left\{0, \ldots, a_{k}\right\}, c_{k}=\right.$ $\left.a_{k} \Rightarrow a_{k-1}=0\right\}$, and $\Sigma^{P e r}=\{\mathbf{c} \in \Sigma \mid \mathbf{c}$ is periodic $\}$ (with certain codes removed, as explain in section 3.1.3.) We can now define a space of function pairs for each $k \in \mathbb{Z}$. For domains $V_{1}^{k}, V_{0}^{k} \subseteq \mathbb{C}$ we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathcal{F}_{k}=\left\{(U, T): U: V_{1}^{k} \rightarrow \mathbb{C}, T: V_{0}^{k} \rightarrow \mathbb{C}, U, T \text { real analytic }\right\} \tag{4.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

with norm $\|(U, T)\|=\|U\|_{1}+\|T\|_{1}$, where $\|\cdot\|_{1}$ denotes the standard $L^{1}$ norm, given for a function analytic on $D(a, r)$ with Taylor expansion $f(x)=$ $\sum_{i=0}^{\infty} f_{i}(x-a)^{i} / r^{i}$ by $\|f\|_{1}=\sum_{i=0}^{\infty}\left|f_{i}\right|$. Then $\mathcal{F}_{k}$ is a real Banach space of function pairs.

### 4.1 Construction of the map $\mathcal{E}_{n}$

The construction of the renormalization strange sets is achieved through a $\operatorname{map} \mathcal{E}_{n}$ which gives a function pair for each periodic sequence $\mathbf{c} \in \Sigma^{P e r}$. Our aim in this section is the construction of the map $\mathcal{E}_{n}$ for periodic $\omega$. We then give an outline of the spectral properties of $R_{n}$ and define a projection operator $P_{n}$ that annihilates the expanding directions in $R_{n}$. Further details are relegated to the appendix. Finally, we give an outline of the construction of $\mathcal{E}_{n}$ in section 4.1.3.

### 4.1.1 Spectral properties of the renormalization operator

In this section we study the spectral properties of the renormalization maps $R_{0, n}$ for $\delta>0$. Introducing the notation $R_{n}^{\ell}=R_{n+\ell-1} R_{n+\ell-2} \ldots R_{n}$ and similarly for $R_{0, n}^{\ell}$, we will investigate the spectral properties of $R_{0, n}^{p}: \mathcal{F}_{n}^{\delta} \rightarrow$ $\mathcal{F}_{n}^{\delta}$. The spectral properties of the linear maps $R_{0, n}$ will be important in what follows, and in this section we prove the following lemma, which characterizes the spectral properties of the operator $R_{0, n}^{p}$ for a periodic of period- $p$.

Lemma 2. Let a be periodic of period $p \geq 1$. Then the operator $R_{0, n}^{p}: \mathcal{F}_{n}^{\delta} \rightarrow$ $\mathcal{F}_{n}^{\delta}$ is compact. Its spectrum consists of simple eigenvalues

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\{(-1)^{p(m+1)}\left(\gamma_{0}^{p}\right)^{m+1},(-1)^{p m}\left(\gamma_{0}^{p}\right)^{m-1}, m=0,1,2, \ldots\right\} \tag{4.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\gamma_{0}^{p}=\omega_{0} \ldots \omega_{p-1}$. In particular there are two eigenvalues of modulus greater than or equal to 1 , viz., $(-1)^{p}$ and $\left(\gamma_{0}^{p}\right)^{-1}$.

The proof of this lemma is given in appendix E. Our aim now is to define projection operators $P_{0, n}$ so that the non-stable eigenvalues, $\left(\gamma_{0}^{p}\right)^{-1}$ and $(-1)^{p}$ (which are given by setting $m=0,1$ in lemma 2 ) are killed off by the projection $P_{0, n}$ and so that the largest remaining eigenvalue has absolute value $0<\gamma_{0}^{p}<1$. Then we can conclude that there exists $\rho \in\left(\gamma_{0}^{p}, 1\right)$ such that $\left\|R_{0, n}^{k} P_{0, n}\right\| \leq K \rho^{k}$ for $k \geq 0$ and for some constant $K$.

### 4.1.2 Projection operator

In order to construct the maps $\beta_{n}$, we first define a projection operator that 'kills off' the expanding eigendirections in the function space $\mathcal{F}_{n}^{\delta}$. In other words, we project down to the stable manifold of the renormalization strange set. This is done in order to obtain a convergent series. Specifically, we have the following lemma.

Lemma 3. Let $\mathbf{a}$ be periodic of period $p \geq 1$. Then for each $n \in \mathbb{Z}$, there exists a projection map $P_{0, n}: \mathcal{F}_{n}^{\delta} \rightarrow \mathcal{F}_{n}^{\delta}$, satisfying $R_{n} P_{0, n}=P_{0, n+1} R_{n}$ and such that the spectral radius of $R_{0, n}^{p} P_{0, n}: \mathcal{F}_{n}^{\delta} \rightarrow \mathcal{F}_{n}^{\delta}$ is strictly less than 1 . Furthermore, there exists constants $K>0$ and $0<\rho<1$ such that, for all $n \in \mathbb{Z}, k \geq 0$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|R_{0, n}^{k} P_{0, n}\right\| \leq K \rho^{k} . \tag{4.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. In order to prove the lemma, let us define

$$
\begin{equation*}
P_{0, n}\left(U_{n}, T_{n}\right)=\left(U_{n}, T_{n}\right)-\Delta_{0}^{n}\left(U_{n}, T_{n}\right) \mathbf{v}_{0}^{n}-\Delta_{1}^{n}\left(U_{n}, T_{n}\right) \mathbf{v}_{1}^{n}, \tag{4.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

where, for $\ell \geq 0$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Delta_{\ell}^{n}\left(U_{n}, T_{n}\right)=\int_{-\omega_{n-1}^{-1}}^{1-\omega_{n-1}^{-1}} U_{n}^{(\ell)}(x) d x+\int_{1-\omega_{n-1}^{-1}}^{1} T_{n}^{(\ell)}(x) d x \tag{4.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

and $\mathbf{v}_{0}^{n}, \mathbf{v}_{1}^{n}$ are function pairs satisfying

$$
\begin{gather*}
R_{0, n} \mathbf{v}_{0}^{n}=\omega_{n}^{-1} \mathbf{v}_{0}^{n+1},  \tag{4.6}\\
R_{0, n} \mathbf{v}_{1}^{n}=-\mathbf{v}_{1}^{n+1} \tag{4.7}
\end{gather*}
$$

subject to the conditions:

$$
\begin{align*}
\Delta_{0}^{n}\left(\mathbf{v}_{0}^{n}\right) & =1,  \tag{4.8}\\
\Delta_{0}^{n}\left(\mathbf{v}_{1}^{n}\right) & =0,  \tag{4.9}\\
\Delta_{1}^{n}\left(\mathbf{v}_{0}^{n}\right) & =0,  \tag{4.10}\\
\text { and } \quad \Delta_{1}^{n}\left(\mathbf{v}_{1}^{n}\right) & =1, \tag{4.11}
\end{align*}
$$

The pairs $\mathbf{v}_{0}^{n}$ and $\mathbf{v}_{1}^{n}$ satisfying these conditions are given in appendix F below. With this definition, the projection $P_{0, n}$ kills off the non-contracting directions $\mathbf{v}_{0}^{n}, \mathbf{v}_{1}^{n}$. Moreover, $P_{0, n}$ commutes with $R_{0, n}$ in the following way:

## Proposition 2.

$$
\begin{equation*}
R_{0, n} P_{0, n}\left(U_{n}, T_{n}\right)=P_{0, n+1} R_{0, n}\left(U_{n}, T_{n}\right) \tag{4.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof.

$$
\begin{align*}
R_{0, n} P_{0, n}\left(U_{n}, T_{n}\right)= & R_{0, n}\left(\left(U_{n}, T_{n}\right)-\Delta_{0}^{n}\left(U_{n}, T_{n}\right) \mathbf{v}_{0}^{n}-\Delta_{1}^{n}\left(U_{n}, T_{n}\right) \mathbf{v}_{1}^{n}\right) \\
= & R_{0, n}\left(U_{n}, T_{n}\right)-\Delta_{0}^{n}\left(U_{n}, T_{n}\right) R_{o, n}\left(\mathbf{v}_{0}^{n}\right)-\Delta_{1}^{n}\left(U_{n}, T_{n}\right) R_{0, n}\left(\mathbf{v}_{1}^{n}\right) \\
= & R_{0, n}\left(U_{n}, T_{n}\right)-\Delta_{0}^{n}\left(U_{n}, T_{n}\right) \omega_{n}^{-1} \mathbf{v}_{0}^{n+1}-\Delta_{1}^{n}\left(U_{n}, T_{n}\right)\left(-\mathbf{v}_{1}^{n+1}\right) \\
= & R_{0, n}\left(U_{n}, T_{n}\right)-\Delta_{0}^{n+1}\left(R_{0, n}\left(U_{n}, T_{n}\right)\right) \mathbf{v}_{0}^{n+1} \\
& -\Delta_{1}^{n+1}\left(R_{0, n}\left(U_{n}, T_{n}\right)\right) \mathbf{v}_{1}^{n+1} \\
= & P_{0, n+1}\left(R_{0, n}\left(U_{n}, T_{n}\right)\right) . \tag{4.13}
\end{align*}
$$

Here we have used equations (4.6), (4.7) and the following result:
Proposition 3.

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Delta_{\ell}^{n+1}\left(R_{0, n}\left(U_{n}, T_{n}\right)\right)=-\left(-\omega_{n}\right)^{\ell-1} \Delta_{\ell}^{n}\left(U_{n}, T_{n}\right) \tag{4.14}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof.

$$
\begin{align*}
\Delta_{\ell}^{n+1}\left(R_{0, n}\left(U_{n}, T_{n}\right)\right)= & \int_{-\omega_{n}^{-1}}^{1-\omega_{n}^{-1}} \frac{d^{\ell}}{d x^{\ell}} T_{n}\left(\theta_{0}^{n}(x)\right) d x \\
& +\int_{1-\omega_{n}^{-1}}^{1} \frac{d^{\ell}}{d x^{\ell}}\left(\sum_{i=0}^{a_{n}-1} T_{n}\left(\theta_{i}^{n}(x)\right)+U_{n}\left(\theta_{a_{n}}^{n}\right)\right) d x  \tag{4.15}\\
= & \left(-\omega_{n}\right)^{\ell} \int_{-\omega_{n}^{-1}}^{1-\omega_{n}^{1}} T_{n}^{(\ell)}\left(\theta_{0}^{n}(x)\right) d x \\
& +\left(-\omega_{n}\right)^{\ell} \int_{1-\omega_{n}^{-1}}^{1} \sum_{i=0}^{a_{n}-1} T_{n}^{(\ell)}\left(\theta_{i}^{n}(x)\right)+U_{n}^{(\ell)}\left(\theta_{a_{n}}^{n}(x)\right) d x \\
= & \left(-\omega_{n}\right)^{\ell-1} \int_{1}^{1-\omega_{n}} T_{n}^{(\ell)}(y) d y  \tag{4.16}\\
& +\left(-\omega_{n}\right)^{\ell-1} \sum_{i=0}^{a_{n}-1} \int_{-\omega_{n}-(i-1)}^{-\omega_{n}-1} T_{n}^{(\ell)}(y) d y \\
& +\left(-\omega_{n}\right)^{\ell-1} \int_{-\omega_{n}-\left(a_{n}-1\right)}^{-\omega_{n}-a_{n}} U_{n}^{(\ell)}(y) d y  \tag{4.17}\\
= & -\left(-\omega_{n}\right)^{\ell-1} \int_{1-\omega_{n}}^{1} T_{n}^{(\ell)}(y) d y \\
& -\left(-\omega_{n}\right)^{\ell-1} \int_{-\omega_{n}-\left(a_{n}-1\right)}^{1-\omega_{n}} T_{n}^{(\ell)}(y) d y \\
& -\left(-\omega_{n}\right)^{\ell-1} \int_{-\omega_{n}-a_{n}}^{-\omega_{n}-\left(a_{n}-1\right)} U_{n}^{(\ell)}(y) d y  \tag{4.18}\\
= & -\left(-\omega_{n}\right)^{\ell-1}\left(\int_{-\omega_{n-1}^{-1}}^{1-\omega_{n-1}^{-1}} U_{n}^{(\ell)}(y) d y+\int_{1-\omega_{n-1}^{-1}}^{1} T_{n}^{(\ell)}(y) d y\right) \tag{4.19}
\end{align*}
$$

$$
\begin{equation*}
=-\left(-\omega_{n}\right)^{\ell-1} \Delta_{\ell}^{n}\left(U_{n}, T_{n}\right) \tag{4.20}
\end{equation*}
$$

We conclude that the spectral radius of $R_{0, n}^{p} P_{0, n}$ is $\left(\omega_{1} \ldots \omega_{p}\right)$, and further
deduce that there exist constants $K>0$ and $0<\rho<1$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|R_{0, n}^{k}\right\| \leq K \rho^{k}, \quad \text { for } \quad k \geq 0 \tag{4.21}
\end{equation*}
$$

This concludes the proof of lemma 3.

We may now readily define a multiplicative version $P_{n}$ of the projection operator $P_{0, n}$ as follows. Letting $\left(u_{n}, t_{n}\right) \in \mathcal{F}_{n}^{\delta}$, we set

$$
\begin{equation*}
P_{n}\left(u_{n}, t_{n}\right)=\left(u_{n}, t_{n}\right) \exp \left(-\Delta_{0}^{n}\left(U_{n}, T_{n}\right) \mathbf{v}_{0}^{n}-\Delta_{1}^{n}\left(U_{n}, T_{n}\right) \mathbf{v}_{1}^{n}\right), \tag{4.22}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\left(U_{n}, T_{n}\right)=\log \left|\left(u_{n}, t_{n}\right)\right|$. It is straightforward to show that $P_{n}$ has the following properties.

1. $P_{n} \exp \left(U_{n}, T_{n}\right)=\exp \left(P_{0, n}\left(U_{n} T_{n}\right)\right)$ for $\left(U_{n}, T_{n}\right) \in \mathcal{F}_{n}^{\delta}$.
2. $P_{n}^{2}=P_{n}$, so that $P_{n}$ is a projection operator;
3. $R_{n} P_{n}=P_{n+1} R_{n}$;

Proof. 1.

$$
\begin{align*}
P_{n}\left(\exp \left(U_{n}, T_{n}\right)\right) & =P_{n}\left(u_{n}, t_{n}\right) \\
& =\left(u_{n}, t_{n}\right) \exp \left(-\Delta_{0}^{n}\left(U_{n}, T_{n}\right) \mathbf{v}_{0}^{n}-\Delta_{1}^{n}\left(U_{n}, T_{n}\right) \mathbf{v}_{1}^{n}\right) \\
& =\exp \left(U_{n}, T_{n}\right) \exp \left(-\Delta_{0}^{n}\left(U_{n}, T_{n}\right) \mathbf{v}_{0}^{n}-\Delta_{1}^{n}\left(U_{n}, T_{n}\right) \mathbf{v}_{1}^{n}\right) \\
& =\exp \left(\left(U_{n}, T_{n}\right)-\Delta_{0}^{n}\left(U_{n}, T_{n}\right) \mathbf{v}_{0}^{n}-\Delta_{1}^{n}\left(U_{n}, T_{n}\right) \mathbf{v}_{1}^{n}\right) \\
& =\exp \left(P_{0, n}\left(U_{n}, T_{n}\right)\right) \tag{4.23}
\end{align*}
$$

2. Let $P_{n}\left(u_{n}, t_{n}\right)=\left(\hat{u}_{n}, \hat{t}_{n}\right)$ then

$$
\begin{align*}
P_{n}^{2}\left(u_{n}, t_{n}\right) & =P_{n}\left(\hat{u}_{n}, \hat{t}_{n}\right) \\
& =\left(\hat{u}_{n}, \hat{t}_{n}\right) \exp \left(-\Delta_{0}^{n}\left(\hat{U}_{n}, \hat{T}_{n}\right) \mathbf{v}_{0}^{n}-\Delta_{1}^{n}\left(\hat{U}_{n}, \hat{T}_{n}\right) \mathbf{v}_{1}^{n}\right) \tag{4.24}
\end{align*}
$$

where $\left(\hat{U}_{n}, \hat{T}_{n}\right)=\log \left|\left(\hat{u}_{n}, \hat{t}_{n}\right)\right|$. Now,

$$
\begin{align*}
\left(\hat{U}_{n}, \hat{T}_{n}\right) & =\log \mid\left(\hat{u}_{n}, \hat{t}_{n}\right) \| \\
& =\log \left|P_{n}\left(u_{n}, t_{n}\right)\right| \\
& =\log \left|\left(u_{n}, t_{n}\right) \exp \left(-\Delta_{0}^{n}\left(U_{n}, T_{n}\right) \mathbf{v}_{0}^{n}-\Delta_{1}^{n}\left(U_{n}, T_{n}\right) \mathbf{v}_{1}^{n}\right)\right| \\
& =\log \left|\left(u_{n}, t_{n}\right)\right|-\Delta_{0}^{n}\left(U_{n}, T_{n}\right) \mathbf{v}_{0}^{n}-\Delta_{1}^{n}\left(U_{n}, T_{n}\right) \mathbf{v}_{1}^{n} \\
& =\left(U_{n}, T_{n}\right)-\Delta_{0}^{n}\left(U_{n}, T_{n}\right) \mathbf{v}_{0}^{n}-\Delta_{1}^{n}\left(U_{n}, T_{n}\right) \mathbf{v}_{1}^{n}, \tag{4.25}
\end{align*}
$$

and using linearity we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Delta_{\ell}^{n}\left(\hat{U}_{n}, \hat{T}_{n}\right)=\Delta_{0}^{n}\left(U_{n}, T_{n}\right)-\Delta_{0}^{n}\left(U_{n}, T_{n}\right) \Delta_{\ell}^{n}\left(\mathbf{v}_{0}^{n}\right)-\Delta_{1}^{n}\left(U_{n}, T_{n}\right) \Delta_{\ell}^{n}\left(\mathbf{v}_{1}^{n}\right) \tag{4.26}
\end{equation*}
$$

Taking $\ell=0$ and using equations (4.8) and (4.9) we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Delta_{0}^{n}\left(\hat{U}_{n}, \hat{T}_{n}\right)=\Delta_{0}^{n}\left(U_{n}, T_{n}\right)-\Delta_{0}^{n}\left(U_{n}, T_{n}\right) \Delta_{0}^{n}\left(\mathbf{v}_{0}^{n}\right)-\Delta_{1}^{n}\left(U_{n}, T_{n}\right) \Delta_{0}^{n}\left(\mathbf{v}_{1}^{n}\right)=0 \tag{4.27}
\end{equation*}
$$

similarly for $\ell=1$ using equations (4.10) and (4.11) we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Delta_{1}^{n}\left(\hat{U}_{n}, \hat{T}_{n}\right)=\Delta_{1}^{n}\left(U_{n}, T_{n}\right)-\Delta_{0}^{n}\left(U_{n}, T_{n}\right) \Delta_{1}^{n}\left(\mathbf{v}_{0}^{n}\right)-\Delta_{1}^{n}\left(U_{n}, T_{n}\right) \Delta_{1}^{n}\left(\mathbf{v}_{1}^{n}\right)=0 \tag{4.28}
\end{equation*}
$$

so that equation (4.24) becomes

$$
\begin{equation*}
P_{n}^{2}\left(u_{n}, t_{n}\right)=\left(\hat{u}_{n}, \hat{t}_{n}\right)=P_{n}\left(u_{n}, t_{n}\right) . \tag{4.29}
\end{equation*}
$$

3. From (4.23) we have that $P_{n}\left(u_{n}, t_{n}\right)=\exp \left(P_{o, n}\left(U_{n}, T_{n}\right)\right)$, then

$$
\begin{align*}
R_{n}\left(P_{n}\left(u_{n}, t_{n}\right)\right)= & R_{n}\left(\exp \left(\left(U_{n}, T_{n}\right)-\Delta_{0}^{n}\left(U_{n}, T_{n}\right) \mathbf{v}_{0}^{n}-\Delta_{1}^{n}\left(U_{n}, T_{n}\right) \mathbf{v}_{1}^{n}\right)\right) \\
= & R_{n}\left(u_{n}, t_{n}\right) \exp \left(-\Delta_{0}^{n}\left(U_{n}, T_{n}\right) R_{n} \mathbf{v}_{0}^{n}-\Delta_{1}^{n}\left(U_{n}, T_{n}\right) R_{n} \mathbf{v}_{1}^{n}\right) \\
= & R_{n}\left(u_{n}, t_{n}\right) \exp \left(-\omega_{n}^{-1} \Delta_{0}^{n}\left(U_{n}, T_{n}\right) \mathbf{v}_{0}^{n+1}+\Delta_{1}^{n}\left(U_{n}, T_{n}\right) \mathbf{v}_{1}^{n+1}\right) \\
= & R_{n}\left(u_{n}, t_{n}\right) \\
& \exp \left(-\Delta_{0}^{n+1}\left(R_{n}\left(u_{n}, t_{n}\right)\right) \mathbf{v}_{0}^{n+1}-\Delta_{1}^{n+1}\left(R_{n}\left(u_{n}, t_{n}\right)\right) \mathbf{v}_{1}^{n+1}\right) \\
= & P_{n+1}\left(R_{n}\left(u_{n}, t_{n}\right)\right) \tag{4.30}
\end{align*}
$$

where we have used the result

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Delta_{\ell}^{n+1}\left(R_{n}\left(u_{n}, t_{n}\right)\right)=-\left(-\omega_{n}\right)^{\ell-1} \Delta_{\ell}^{n}\left(U_{n}, T_{n}\right) . \tag{4.31}
\end{equation*}
$$

Lemma 3 has a corollary for the multiplicative projection $P_{n}$.

Lemma 4. Let $\left(u_{n}, t_{n}\right) \in \mathcal{F}_{n}^{\delta}$ satisfy

1. $P_{n}\left(u_{n}, t_{n}\right)=\left(u_{n}, t_{n}\right)$;
2. $\left(u_{n}, t_{n}\right) \neq 0$ on $\bar{V}_{1}^{n} \times \bar{V}_{0}^{n}$;
3. $\left(u_{n}, t_{n}\right)>0$ on $\left(\bar{V}_{1}^{n} \times \bar{V}_{0}^{n}\right) \cap \mathbb{R}^{2}$.

Then $R_{n}^{\ell}\left(u_{n}, t_{n}\right) \rightarrow(1,1)$ as $\ell \rightarrow \infty$.

Proof. We have that $\left(u_{n}, t_{n}\right)=\exp \left(U_{n}, T_{n}\right)$ where $\left(U_{n}, T_{n}\right) \in \mathcal{F}_{n}^{\delta}$ is well defined and analytic since $\left(u_{n}, t_{n}\right) \neq 0$ on $\bar{V}_{1}^{n} \times \bar{V}_{0}^{n}$. Moreover $P_{0, n}\left(U_{n}, T_{n}\right)=$ $\left(U_{n}, T_{n}\right)$. Then from Lemma $3,\left\|R_{0, n}^{\ell}\left(U_{n}, T_{n}\right)\right\| \rightarrow(0,0)$ as $\ell \rightarrow \infty$. We conclude that $R_{n}^{\ell}\left(u_{n}, t_{n}\right)=\exp \left(R_{0, n}^{\ell}\left(U_{n}, T_{n}\right)\right) \rightarrow(1,1)$ as $\ell \rightarrow \infty$.

We shall make use of the multiplicative projection in our subsequent analysis.

### 4.1.3 Construction of the map $\mathcal{E}_{n}$

We aim to construct a biinfinite sequence of maps $\mathcal{E}_{n}: \Sigma^{P e r} \rightarrow \mathcal{F}_{n}^{\delta}$, such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathcal{E}_{n}=h^{n}(\mathbf{c}), \tag{4.32}
\end{equation*}
$$

where

$$
h^{n}(\mathbf{c})= \begin{cases}\left(y_{n}-x, y_{n}-x\right) & c_{n-1}=0  \tag{4.33}\\ \left(1, y_{n}-x\right) & c_{n-1} \neq 0\end{cases}
$$

and multiplication is carried out coordinatewise so that $\left(u_{1}, t_{1}\right)\left(u_{2}, t_{2}\right)=$ $\left(u_{1} u_{2}, t_{1} t_{2}\right)$. Here $y_{n}=e_{n}(\mathbf{c})$ is the image of the evaluation map, and $\left(u_{n}^{1}, t_{n}^{1}\right) \in$
$\mathcal{F}_{n}^{\delta}$ with

$$
\begin{array}{ll}
u_{n}^{1}(x)>0, & x \in\left(-\omega_{n}-a_{n},-\omega_{n}-\left(a_{n}-1\right)\right) \\
t_{n}^{1}(x)>0, & x \in\left(-\omega_{n}-\left(a_{n}-1\right), 1\right) \tag{4.35}
\end{array}
$$

and $\mathcal{E}_{n}$ has the important property

$$
\begin{equation*}
R_{n}\left(\left(s^{u}, s^{t}\right) \mathcal{E}_{n}(\mathbf{c})\right)=\kappa_{c_{n}}\left(s^{u}, s^{t}\right) \mathcal{E}_{n+1}(\mathbf{c}) . \tag{4.36}
\end{equation*}
$$

where the sign-pair $\left(s^{u}, s^{t}\right) \in\{+1,-1\}^{2}$ and $\kappa_{c_{n}}:\{+1,-1\}^{2} \rightarrow\{+1,-1\}^{2}$ is given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
\kappa_{c_{n}}\left(s^{u}, s^{t}\right)=\left(-s^{t},-(-1)^{c_{n}}\left(s^{t}\right)^{a_{n}} s^{u}\right) . \tag{4.37}
\end{equation*}
$$

Let us we briefly explain the origin of $\kappa_{c_{n}}$. We show below that $R_{n}\left(\mathcal{E}_{n}(\mathbf{c})\right)=$ $\left(-1,-(-1)^{c_{n}}\right) \mathcal{E}_{n+1}$. Using the multiplicative properties of $R_{n}$ we have

$$
\begin{align*}
R_{n}\left(\left(s^{u}, s^{t}\right) \mathcal{E}_{n}\right) & \left.=\left(s^{t},\left(s^{t}\right)^{a_{n}} s^{u}\right)\right)\left(-1,-(-1)^{c_{n}}\right) \mathcal{E}_{n+1}  \tag{4.38}\\
& =\kappa_{c_{n}}\left(s^{u}, s^{t}\right) \mathcal{E}_{n+1} . \tag{4.39}
\end{align*}
$$

When $\left(s^{u}, s^{t}\right)=(+1,+1)$ the relation (4.36) becomes

$$
\begin{equation*}
R_{n}\left(\mathcal{E}_{n}(\mathbf{c})\right)=\kappa_{c_{n}}(+1,+1) \mathcal{E}_{n+1}=\left(-1,-(-1)^{c_{n}}\right) \mathcal{E}_{n+1} \tag{4.40}
\end{equation*}
$$

Let us define $H^{n, 1}(\mathbf{c})$ by the equation:

$$
\begin{equation*}
R_{n} h^{n}(\mathbf{c})=\kappa_{c_{n}}(+1,+1) h^{n+1}(\mathbf{c}) \exp \left(H^{n, 1}(\mathbf{c})\right) \tag{4.41}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $H^{n, 1}(\mathbf{c}) \in \mathcal{F}_{n+1}^{\delta}$. We give the construction of $H^{n, 1}(\mathbf{c})$ explicitly. There are four cases:

Case (i). $c_{n-1}=0, c_{n}=0$. Recalling that

$$
\begin{equation*}
R_{n}(u(x), t(x))=\left(t\left(\theta_{0}^{n}(x)\right), \prod_{i=0}^{a_{n}-1} t\left(\theta_{i}^{n}(x)\right) u\left(\theta_{a_{n}}^{n}(x)\right)\right) \tag{4.42}
\end{equation*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{equation*}
y_{n+i}=-c_{n+i}-\omega_{n+i} y_{n+(i+1)}, \tag{4.43}
\end{equation*}
$$

and using equation (4.37) we have that

$$
\begin{align*}
R_{n}\left(h^{n}(\mathbf{c})\right) & =\left(y_{n}-\theta_{0}^{n}(x),\left(\prod_{i=0}^{a_{n}-1} y_{n}-\theta_{i}^{n}(x)\right)\left(y_{n}-\theta_{a_{n}}^{n}(x)\right)\right) \\
& =\left(\theta_{0}^{n}\left(y_{n+1}\right)-\theta_{0}^{n}(x),\left(\theta_{0}^{n}\left(y_{n+1}\right)-\theta_{0}^{n}(x)\right) \prod_{i=1}^{a_{n}}\left(y_{n}-\theta_{i}^{n}(x)\right)\right) \\
& =(-1,-1)\left(y_{n+1}-x, y_{n+1}-x\right)\left(\omega_{n}, \omega_{n} \prod_{i=1}^{a_{n}}\left(y_{n}-\theta_{i}^{n}(x)\right)\right) \\
& =\kappa_{0}(+1,+1) h^{n+1}(\mathbf{c}) \exp \left(H^{n, 1}(\mathbf{c})\right), \tag{4.44}
\end{align*}
$$

where

$$
\begin{equation*}
H^{n, 1}(\mathbf{c})=\log \left(\omega_{n}, \omega_{n} \prod_{i=1}^{a_{n}}\left(y_{n}-\theta_{i}^{n}(x)\right)\right) . \tag{4.45}
\end{equation*}
$$

Case (ii). $c_{n-1} \neq 0, c_{n}=0$. Similarly,

$$
\begin{align*}
R_{n}\left(h^{n}(\mathbf{c})\right) & =\left(y_{n}-\theta_{0}^{n}(x), \prod_{i=0}^{a_{n}-1}\left(y_{n}-\theta_{i}^{n}(x)\right)\right) \\
& =\left(\theta_{0}^{n}\left(y_{n+1}\right)-\theta_{0}^{n}(x),\left(\theta_{0}^{n}\left(y_{n+1}\right)-\theta_{0}^{n}(x)\right) \prod_{i=1}^{a_{n}-1}\left(y_{n}-\theta_{i}^{n}(x)\right)\right) \\
& =(-1,-1)\left(y_{n+1}-x, y_{n+1}-x\right)\left(\omega_{n}, \omega_{n} \prod_{i=1}^{a_{n}}\left(y_{n}-\theta_{i}^{n}(x)\right)\right) \\
& =\kappa_{0}(+1,+1) h^{n+1}(\mathbf{c}) \exp \left(H^{n, 1}(\mathbf{c})\right) \tag{4.46}
\end{align*}
$$

where

$$
\begin{equation*}
H^{n, 1}(\mathbf{c})=\log \left(\omega_{n}, \omega_{n} \prod_{i=1}^{a_{n}-1}\left(y_{n}-\theta_{i}^{n}(x)\right)\right) \tag{4.47}
\end{equation*}
$$

Case (iii). $c_{n-1}=0, c_{n} \neq 0$. Here,

$$
\begin{align*}
R_{n}\left(h^{n}(\mathbf{c})\right)= & \left(y_{n}-\theta_{0}^{n}(x),\left(\prod_{i=0}^{a_{n}-1} y_{n}-\theta_{i}^{n}(x)\right)\left(y_{n}-\theta_{a_{n}}^{n}(x)\right)\right) \\
= & \left(1, y_{n}-\theta_{c_{n}}^{n}(x)\right) \\
& \left(y_{n}-\theta_{0}^{n}(x),\left(\prod_{i=0}^{c_{n}-1}\left(y_{n}-\theta_{i}^{n}(x)\right)\right)\left(\prod_{j=c_{n}+1}^{a_{n}}\left(y_{n}-\theta_{j}^{n}(x)\right)\right)\right) \\
= & \left(-1,-(-1)^{c_{n}}\right)\left(1, y_{n+1}-x\right) \\
& \left(\theta_{0}^{n}(x)-y_{n},(-1)^{c_{n}} \omega_{n}\left(\prod_{i=0}^{c_{n}-1}\left(y_{n}-\theta_{i}^{n}(x)\right)\right)\left(\prod_{j=c_{n}+1}^{a_{n}}\left(y_{n}-\theta_{j}^{n}(x)\right)\right)\right) \\
= & \kappa_{c_{n}}(+1,+1) h^{n+1}(\mathbf{c}) \exp \left(H^{n, 1}(\mathbf{c})\right), \tag{4.48}
\end{align*}
$$

where

$$
\begin{equation*}
H^{n, 1}(\mathbf{c})=\log \left(\theta_{0}^{n}(x)-y_{n}, \omega_{n}\left(\prod_{i=0}^{c_{n}-1}\left(\theta_{i}^{n}(x)-y_{n}\right)\right)\left(\prod_{j=c_{n}+1}^{a_{n}}\left(y_{n}-\theta_{j}^{n}(x)\right)\right)\right) \tag{4.49}
\end{equation*}
$$

Case (iv). $c_{n-1} \neq 0, c_{n} \neq 0$. Finally,

$$
\begin{align*}
R_{n}\left(h^{n}(\mathbf{c})\right)= & \left(y_{n}-\theta_{0}^{n}(x), \prod_{i=0}^{a_{n}-1}\left(y_{n}-\theta_{i}^{n}(x)\right)\right) \\
= & \left(1, y_{n}-\theta_{c_{n}}^{n}(x)\right) \\
& \left(y_{n}-\theta_{0}^{n}(x),\left(\prod_{i=0}^{c_{n}-1}\left(y_{n}-\theta_{i}^{n}(x)\right)\right)\left(\prod_{j=c_{n}+1}^{a_{n}}\left(y_{n}-\theta_{j}^{n}(x)\right)\right)\right) \\
= & \left(-1,-(-1)^{c_{n}}\right)\left(1, y_{n+1}-x\right) \\
& \left(\theta_{0}^{n}(x)-y_{n},(-1)^{c_{n}} \omega_{n}\left(\prod_{i=0}^{c_{n}-1}\left(y_{n}-\theta_{i}^{n}(x)\right)\right)\left(\prod_{j=c_{n}+1}^{a_{n}-1}\left(y_{n}-\theta_{j}^{n}(x)\right)\right)\right) \\
= & \kappa_{c_{n}}(+1,+1) h^{n+1}(\mathbf{c}) \exp \left(H^{n, 1}(\mathbf{c})\right), \tag{4.50}
\end{align*}
$$

where

$$
\begin{equation*}
H^{n, 1}(\mathbf{c})=\log \left(\theta_{0}^{n}(x)-y_{n}, \omega_{n}\left(\prod_{i=0}^{c_{n}-1}\left(\theta_{i}^{n}(x)-y_{n}\right)\right)\left(\prod_{j=c_{n}+1}^{a_{n}-1}\left(y_{n}-\theta_{j}^{n}(x)\right)\right)\right) \tag{4.51}
\end{equation*}
$$

The reason for defining $H^{n, 1}$ is that it is a function pair that has no zeros on the domains $V_{1}$ and $V_{0}$, provided $\delta$ is chosen sufficiently small, and, we have a bound for $\left\|H^{n, 1}(\mathbf{c})\right\|$ independent of $n$. Indeed, we have the following technical lemma:

Lemma 5. There exist $\delta>0$ and $L>0$ (depending on $\mathbf{a}$ and $\mathbf{c}$ ) such that
the function $H^{n, 1}=\left(u_{n+1}^{1}, t_{n+1}^{1}\right) \in \mathcal{F}_{n+1}^{\delta}$ satisfies

1. $u_{n+1}^{1}(x)>0$ for $x \in \bar{V}_{1}^{n+1} \cap \mathbb{R}$, and $t_{n+1}^{1}(x)>0$ for $x \in \bar{V}_{0}^{n+1} \cap \mathbb{R}$;
2. $\left\|H^{n, 1}\right\| \leq L$.

The proof of this lemma is laborious, if straightforward. We refer the reader to appendix G, where full details will be found. The precise bound $L$ is dependent on the choice of $\delta$, but this merely governs the estimates for the convergence of $\mathcal{E}_{n}(\mathbf{c})$ and does not affect the function so defined which is independent of $\delta$.

Let us now define $\mathcal{E}_{n}=h^{n} \exp \left(K^{n}\right)$ where $K^{n}$ is constructed so that $K^{n}=$ $K^{n}(\mathbf{c}) \in \mathcal{F}_{n}^{\delta}$, and $H^{n, 1}+R_{0, n} K^{n}=K^{n+1}$, which is the required functional equation for $K$.

Defining $H^{n, 0}=\log \left|h^{n}\right|$ it is also shown in appendix H that

$$
\begin{equation*}
R_{0, n} H^{n, 0}=H^{n+1,0}+H^{n, 1} \tag{4.52}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $H^{n, 1} \in \mathcal{F}_{n+1}^{\delta}$ is as before.
Using the notation $R_{n}^{\ell}=R_{n+\ell-1} R_{n+\ell-2} \ldots R_{n}$ and similarly for $R_{0, n}^{\ell}$, we define:

$$
\begin{equation*}
H^{n, \ell}=R_{0, n+1}^{\ell-1} H^{n, 1}, \quad \hat{H}^{n, \ell}=R_{0, n+1}^{\ell-1} P_{0, n+1} H^{n, 1} \tag{4.53}
\end{equation*}
$$

Setting $\hat{G}^{n}=\sum_{k=1}^{\infty} \hat{H}^{n-k, k}$, the convergence of the series is shown in appendix H where it is also demonstrated that $\hat{G}^{n}$ satisfies the equation

$$
\begin{equation*}
R_{0, n} \hat{G}^{n}+\hat{H}^{n, 1}=\hat{G}^{n+1} . \tag{4.54}
\end{equation*}
$$

The function pair $K^{n}$ is now given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
K^{n}=\hat{G}^{n}-\left(I-P_{0, n}\right) H^{n, 0} \in \mathcal{F}_{n}^{\delta}, \tag{4.55}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $P_{0, n}$ is given by (4.4) above. The details are laid out in appendix H . The construction of $\mathcal{E}_{n}$ depends on $\mathbf{c}$ in that $\delta$ depends on $\mathbf{c}$. $\delta$ may be chosen locally constant, however, so that we may define a restricted map $\mathcal{E}_{n}: N \cap \Sigma^{P e r} \rightarrow \mathcal{F}_{n} \subseteq \mathcal{F}_{n}^{\delta}$, where the patch $N$ is an open neighbourhood of c. By covering $\Sigma^{P e r}$ by patches of this form, we may define $\mathcal{E}_{n}: \Sigma^{P e r} \rightarrow \mathcal{F}_{n}$. Let us remark briefly on the continuity of the map $\mathcal{E}_{n}$. Since the evaluation map $e_{n}$ and the partnering operation are continuous, the functions $h_{n}$ depend continuously on $\mathbf{c}$ in $\mathcal{F}_{n}^{\delta}$ and $\mathcal{F}_{n}$. Since the series for $\hat{G}_{n}$ is uniformly convergent in $\mathcal{F}_{n}^{\delta}$ it follows also that $\hat{G}_{n}$, and, hence, $K^{n}$ and $\mathcal{E}_{n}$ depend continuously on $\mathbf{c}$ in each neighbourhood $N$. It follows immediately that $\mathcal{E}_{n}: \Sigma^{P e r} \rightarrow \mathcal{F}$ is continuous.

### 4.2 The map $\beta_{n}$ and symmetry properties

The maps $\mathcal{E}_{n}$ constructed above form the basic ingredients of the embedding of the model space into the function-pair space $\mathcal{F}_{n}^{\delta}$. They map the space $\Sigma^{\text {Per }}$ into $\mathcal{F}_{n}^{\delta}$ sending a periodic code $\mathbf{c}$ into a function pair $(u(x), t(x))$ with $t(x)$ having precisely one zero. The initial condition $t_{1}(x)$ has two zeros in the fundamental interval (see (1.57)) and these zeros are related by the symmetry of the cosine function. We incorporate this by constructing a new
map $\beta_{n}$ in terms of $\mathcal{E}_{n}$. This map $\beta_{n}$ is that required by Theorem 9 .

### 4.2.1 Definition of $\beta_{n}$

Specifically, we define $\beta_{n}: \Sigma^{P e r} \rightarrow \mathcal{F}_{n}^{\delta}$ for $\mathbf{c} \in \Sigma^{P e r}$ by

$$
\begin{equation*}
\beta_{n}(\mathbf{c})=\mathcal{E}_{n}(\mathbf{c}) \mathcal{E}_{n}(\tilde{\mathbf{c}}), \tag{4.56}
\end{equation*}
$$

where, as usual, multiplication is carried out coordinatewise. Let us now define a map $L_{b_{n}}$, for $b_{n} \in \mathbb{Z}$ on sign-pairs $\left(s_{n}^{u}, s_{n}^{t}\right) \in\{+1,-1\}^{2}$

$$
\begin{equation*}
L_{b_{n}}\left(s_{n}^{u}, s_{n}^{t}\right)=\left(s_{n}^{t},(-1)^{b_{n}}\left(s_{n}^{t}\right)^{a_{n}} s_{n}^{u}\right) . \tag{4.57}
\end{equation*}
$$

The map is invertible with inverse

$$
\begin{equation*}
L_{b_{n}}^{-1}\left(s_{n}^{u}, s_{n}^{t}\right)=\left((-1)^{b_{n}}\left(s_{n}^{u}\right)^{a_{n}} s_{n}^{t}, s_{n}^{u}\right) . \tag{4.58}
\end{equation*}
$$

The map $L_{b_{n}}$ is derived from $\kappa_{c_{n}}$ as follows. Firstly, from equation (4.36), we have that

$$
\begin{align*}
R_{n}\left(\beta_{n}(\mathbf{c})\right) & =R_{n}\left(\mathcal{E}_{n}(\mathbf{c})\right) R_{n}\left(\mathcal{E}_{n}(\tilde{\mathbf{c}})\right)=\kappa_{c_{n}}(+1,+1) \mathcal{E}_{n+1}(\mathbf{c}) \kappa_{\tilde{c}_{n}}(+1,+1) \mathcal{E}_{n+1}(\tilde{\mathbf{c}})  \tag{4.59}\\
& =L_{b_{n}}(+1,+1) \beta_{n+1}(\mathbf{c}) \tag{4.60}
\end{align*}
$$

where $b_{n}=c_{n}+\tilde{c}_{n}$. Similarly, for general sign-pairs $\left(s^{u}, s^{t}\right)$, we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
R_{n}\left(\left(s^{u}, s^{t}\right) \beta_{n}(\mathbf{c})\right)=L_{b_{n}}\left(s^{u}, s^{t}\right) \beta_{n+1}(\mathbf{c}), \tag{4.61}
\end{equation*}
$$

as claimed in Theorem 9. For, from equation (4.56),

$$
\begin{align*}
R_{n}\left(\left(s_{n}^{u}, s_{n}^{t}\right) \beta_{n}(\mathbf{c})\right) & =R_{n}\left(s_{n}^{u}, s_{n}^{t}\right) R_{n}\left(\mathcal{E}_{n}(\mathbf{c})\right) R_{n}\left(\mathcal{E}_{n}(\tilde{\mathbf{c}})\right) \\
& =\left(s_{n}^{t},\left(s_{n}^{t}\right)^{a_{n}} s_{n}^{u}\right) \kappa_{c_{n}}(+1,+1) \mathcal{E}_{n+1}(\mathbf{c}) \kappa_{\tilde{c}_{n}}(+1,+1) \mathcal{E}_{n+1}(\tilde{\mathbf{c}}) \\
& =\left(s_{n}^{t},\left(s_{n}^{t}\right)^{a_{n}} s_{n}^{u}\right)\left(-1,-(-1)^{c_{n}}\right)\left(-1,-(-1)^{\tilde{c}_{n}}\right) \mathcal{E}_{n+1}(\mathbf{c}) \mathcal{E}_{n+1}  \tag{c}\\
& =\left(s_{n}^{t},(-1)^{b_{n}}\left(s_{n}^{t}\right)^{a_{n}} s_{n}^{u}\right) \beta_{n+1}(\mathbf{c}) \\
& =L_{b_{n}}\left(s_{n}^{u}, s_{n}^{t}\right) \beta_{n+1}(\mathbf{c}) . \tag{4.62}
\end{align*}
$$

The following theorem is the key to the construction of the strange set.
Theorem 9. Let a be a fixed sequence in $\mathbb{N}^{\mathbb{Z}}$, Per corresponding to a periodic continued fraction. For each $n \in \mathbb{Z}$, there exists a continuous map $\beta_{n}$ : $\Sigma^{P e r} \rightarrow \mathcal{F}_{n}$ such that for $\mathbf{c} \in \Sigma^{P e r}$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
R_{n} \beta_{n}(\mathbf{c})=L_{b_{n}}(+1,+1) \beta_{n+1}(\mathbf{c}), \tag{4.63}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $L_{b_{n}}:\{+1,-1\}^{2} \rightarrow\{+1,-1\}^{2}$ is given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
L_{b_{n}}\left(s_{n}^{u}, s_{n}^{t}\right)=\left(s_{n}^{t},(-1)^{b_{n}}\left(s_{n}^{t}\right)^{a_{n}} s_{n}^{u}\right) \tag{4.64}
\end{equation*}
$$

and multiplication is carried out coordinatewise. Here $b_{n}=c_{n}+\tilde{c}_{n}$ where $\tilde{\mathbf{c}}=\left(\tilde{c}_{k}\right)_{k \in \mathbb{Z}}$ denotes the partner code to $\mathbf{c}$ (to be defined in section 3.1.4
below), $\Sigma^{P e r}$ is a subspace of periodic codes to be defined in section 3.1.3 below and $\mathcal{F}_{n}$ is the function-pair space defined in section 3.3. The equation (4.63) generalizes to

$$
\begin{equation*}
R_{n}\left(\left(s^{u}, s^{t}\right) \beta_{n}(\mathbf{c})\right)=L_{b_{n}}\left(s^{u}, s^{t}\right) \beta_{n+1}(\mathbf{c}) \tag{4.65}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\left(s^{u}, s^{t}\right) \in\{+1,-1\}^{2}$ is an arbitrary sign pair. The map $\beta_{n}$ is two-toone in the sense that $\beta_{n}(\mathbf{c})=\beta_{n}\left(\mathbf{c}^{\prime}\right)$ if, and only if, $\mathbf{c}^{\prime}=\mathbf{c}$ or $\mathbf{c}^{\prime}=\tilde{\mathbf{c}}$.

Proof. It is immediately clear from (4.56) that $\beta_{n}(\mathbf{c})=\beta_{n}(\tilde{\mathbf{c}})$. Conversely, let us suppose that $\beta_{n}(\mathbf{c})=\beta_{n}\left(\mathbf{c}^{\prime}\right)$ for $\mathbf{c}, \mathbf{c}^{\prime} \in \Sigma^{P e r}$. Then, by construction, $\mathcal{E}_{n}(\mathbf{c}) \mathcal{E}_{n}(\tilde{\mathbf{c}})=\mathcal{E}_{n}\left(\mathbf{c}^{\prime}\right) \mathcal{E}_{n}\left(\tilde{\mathbf{c}}^{\prime}\right)$. Now, by construction, the zero of the second coordinate of $\mathcal{E}_{n}(\mathbf{c})$ has $y_{n}=e_{n}(\mathbf{c})$ and, similarly for $\mathcal{E}_{n}(\tilde{\mathbf{c}}), \mathcal{E}_{n}\left(\mathbf{c}^{\prime}\right)$ and $\mathcal{E}_{n}\left(\tilde{\mathbf{c}}^{\prime}\right)$. It follows immediately that $e_{n}\left(\mathbf{c}^{\prime}\right)=e_{n}(\mathbf{c})$ or $e_{n}\left(\mathbf{c}^{\prime}\right)=e_{n}(\tilde{\mathbf{c}})$ and from section 3.1 that $\mathbf{c}^{\prime}=\mathbf{c}$ or $\mathbf{c}^{\prime}=\tilde{\mathbf{c}}$.

We note that $\beta_{n}$ is continuous because $\mathcal{E}_{n}$ is continuous and since the partnering operation is continuous.

### 4.2.2 Sign dynamics

We now consider the dynamics of a sign-pair $\left(s^{u}, s^{t}\right) \in\{-1,+1\}^{2}$ under the $\operatorname{map} L_{b}\left(s^{u}, s^{t}\right)=\left(s^{t},(-1)^{b}\left(s^{t}\right)^{a_{n}} s^{u}\right)$. It is the sign dynamics that determine the symmetry structure of the renormalization strange set. Our task is to
understand the behaviour of the map $L_{b}$ on the block structures,

$$
\begin{align*}
& \left(0 a_{n+1}\right) \text { for } m=2 ;  \tag{4.66}\\
& \left(0\left(a_{n+1}+1\right)\left(a_{n+2}-1\right)\right) \text { for } m=3 ;  \tag{4.67}\\
& \left(0\left(a_{n+1}+1\right) a_{n+2} \ldots a_{n+m-2}\left(a_{n+m-1}-1\right)\right) \text { for } m \geq 4 . \tag{4.68}
\end{align*}
$$

Let us consider a block of length $m \geq 1$ starting at iteration $n$ with sign-pair $\left(s_{n}^{u}, s_{n}^{t}\right)$. We calculate the sign-pair $\left(s_{n+m}^{u}, s_{n+m}^{t}\right)$ in terms of $\left(s_{n}^{u}, s_{n}^{t}\right)$ and, to this end, we write, for $j \geq 0$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left.\left.\left(s_{n+j}^{u}, s_{n+j}^{t}\right)=\left((-1)^{r_{n+j-1}}\left(s_{n}^{u}\right)^{p_{n}+j-1}\left(s_{n}^{t}\right)^{q_{n}+j-1}\right),(-1)^{r_{n+j}}\left(s_{n}^{u}\right)^{p_{n}+j}\left(s_{n}^{t}\right)^{q_{n}+j}\right)\right), \tag{4.69}
\end{equation*}
$$

where this equation defines the indices $p_{n+j}, q_{n+j}, r_{n+j}$. Using the relation $\left(s_{n+j+1}^{u}, s_{n+j+1}^{t}\right)=L_{b_{n+j}}\left(s_{n+j}^{u}, s_{n+j}^{t}\right)$, where $b_{n+j}$ is the $j$ th entry in the block structure starting at $n$, a straightforward calculation gives the recurrence relations and initial conditions

$$
\begin{align*}
& p_{n+j+1}=a_{n+j} p_{n+j}+p_{n+j-1}, p_{n}=0,  \tag{4.70}\\
& q_{n+j+1}=a_{n+j} q_{n+j}+q_{n+j-1}, q_{n}=1,  \tag{4.71}\\
& q_{n-1}=0  \tag{4.72}\\
& r_{n+j+1}=a_{n+j} r_{n+j}+r_{n+j-1}+b_{n+j}, r_{n}=0,
\end{align*} r_{n-1}=0 .
$$

valid for $j=0, \ldots, n+m-1$. Using this notation, we may readily obtain the following results.

Lemma 6. Calculating modulo 2, we have

1. $r_{n-1} \neq p_{n-1}, r_{n}=p_{n}, r_{n+j} \neq p_{n+j}$, for $j=1, \ldots, m-1$, and $r_{n+m}=$ $p_{n+m} ;$
2. for $j=0, \ldots, m$,

$$
\left(\begin{array}{cc}
p_{n+j-1} & q_{n+j-1}  \tag{4.73}\\
p_{n+j} & q_{n+j}
\end{array}\right)=M_{n+j-1} \ldots M_{n} .
$$

The proof of the lemma is a straightforward application of the recurrence relations ( $4.70-4.72$ ) and the block structures ( $4.66-4.68$ ) given above. Calculating modulo 2, gives for $m=2, r_{n+1}=0 \neq 1=p_{n+1}$ and $r_{n+2}=$ $a_{n+2}=p_{n+2}$ and for $m=3, r_{n+1}=0 \neq 1=p_{n+1}, r_{n+2}=a_{n+1}+1 \neq$ $a_{n+1}=p_{n+2}$, whilst $r_{n+3}=a_{n+2} a_{n+1}+1=p_{n+3}$. For $m \geq 4$, we have $r_{n+1}=0 \neq 1=p_{n+1}, r_{n+2}=a_{n+1}+1 \neq a_{n+1}=p_{n+2}$ and, by induction, for $j=1, \ldots, n+m-2$, we have $r_{n+j+1}-p_{n+j+1}=a_{n+j} r_{n+j}+r_{n+j-1}+$ $b_{n+j}-\left(a_{n+j} p_{n+j}+p_{n+j-1}\right) a_{n+j}\left(r_{n+j}-p_{n+j}\right)+r_{n+j-1}-p_{n+j-1}+a_{n+1}=$ $a_{n+j}+1+a_{n+1}=1$, using $r_{n+j}-p_{n+j}, r_{n+j-1}-p_{n+j-1}=1$. Similarly, we have $r_{n+m}-p_{n+m}=a_{n+j} r_{n+m-1}+r_{n+m-2}+b_{n+m-1}-\left(a_{n+m-1} p_{n+m-1}+p_{n+m-2}\right)$ $=a_{n+m-1}\left(r_{n+m-1}-p_{n+m-1}\right)+r_{n+m-2}-p_{n+m-2}+a_{n+m-1}-1=a_{n+m-1}+$ $1+a_{n+m-1}-1=0$, as claimed. Here we have used $r_{n+m-1}-p_{n+m-1}$, $r_{n+m-2}-p_{n+m-2}=1$. This completes the proof of statement 1 . Statement 2 follows immediately from the recurrence relations for $p_{n+j}$ and $q_{n+j}$ and the initial conditions. Indeed, writing the recurrence relations in matrix form,
we have for $j=0, \ldots, m$,

$$
\left(\begin{array}{cc}
p_{n+j-1} & q_{n+j-1}  \tag{4.74}\\
p_{n+j} & q_{n+j}
\end{array}\right)=M_{n+j-1} \ldots M_{n}\left(\begin{array}{ll}
1 & 0 \\
0 & 1
\end{array}\right)=M_{n+j-1} \ldots M_{n}
$$

as required. The lemma is proved.

### 4.2.3 Symmetries of the renormalization strange set

We now consider the symmetries of the renormalization strange sets. The renormalization strange sets are built from copies of the fundamental sets, the symmetries of which, i.e., the number of copies and orientation, are determined by the sign pairs $\left(s_{n}^{u}, s_{n}^{t}\right)$, which in turn depend on the maps the $L_{b}$. It transpires that we can analyse the symmetries in terms a group of order 6 determined by the parities of the entries in the $p$-periodic continued fraction $\mathbf{a}=\left(a_{k}\right)_{k \in \mathbb{Z}}, a_{k+p}=a_{k}$. Let us write $\bar{a}$ for $a \bmod 2$, and let us consider the reduced continued fraction $\overline{\mathbf{a}}=\left[\overline{\bar{a}}_{1}, \bar{a}_{2}, \ldots, \bar{a}_{p}\right]$. Let $A, B$ be the $2 \times 2$ matrices

$$
A=\left(\begin{array}{ll}
0 & 1  \tag{4.75}\\
1 & 0
\end{array}\right), \quad B=\left(\begin{array}{ll}
0 & 1 \\
1 & 1
\end{array}\right)
$$

Then over the field of two elements $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$, i.e., with addition and multiplication modulo $2, A$ and $B$ satisfy $A^{2}=I, B^{3}=I, B A=A B^{2}$ and thus generate a group of order 6 isomorphic to the symmetric group $S_{3}$ and the dihedral group $D_{3}$. The elements of this group are $I, B, B^{2}, A, A B, A B^{2}$, with orders given in table 4.1 below.

| Element <br> $\bar{M}$ | Order | Action on <br> sign-pair <br> $\left(s^{u}, s^{t}\right)$ | Invariant sign-pair sets <br> other than $\{(-1,1)\}$. | Number of <br> copies of <br> fundamental set |
| :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- |
| $I$ | 1 | $\left(s^{u}, s^{t}\right)$ | $\{(1,1)\},\{(1,-1)\},\{(-1,-1)\}$ | 1 |
| $B$ | 3 | $\left(-s^{t},-s^{u} s^{t}\right)$ | $\{(1,1),(1,-1),(-1,-1)\}$ | 3 |
| $B^{2}$ | 3 | $\left(s^{u} s^{t},-s^{u}\right)$ | $\{(1,1),(1,-1),(-1,-1)\}$ | 3 |
| $A$ | 2 | $\left(-s^{t},-s^{u}\right)$ | $\{(1,1),(-1,-1)\},\{(1,-1)\}$ | 1 or 2 |
| $A B$ | 2 | $\left(s^{u} s^{t}, s^{t}\right)$ | $\{(1,-1),(-1,-1)\},\{(1,1)\}$ | 1 or 2 |
| $A B^{2}$ | 2 | $\left(s^{u},-s^{u} s^{t}\right)$ | $\{(1,1),(1,-1)\},\{(-1,-1)\}$ | 1 or 2 |

Tab. 4.1: Action of group elements on sign-pairs.

Now, let us write $\bar{M}=M_{n+p-1} M_{n+p-2} \ldots M_{n} \bmod 2$, where

$$
M_{i}=\left(\begin{array}{cc}
0 & 1  \tag{4.76}\\
1 & a_{i}
\end{array}\right)
$$

From the lemma 6 we obtain immediately that for a block of length $p$ or over,

$$
\begin{align*}
\left(s_{n+p}^{u}, s_{n+p}^{t}\right) & =\left((-1)^{r_{n+p-1}}\left(s_{n}^{u}\right)^{p_{n+m-1}}\left(s_{n}^{t}\right)^{q_{n+m-1}},(-1)^{r_{n+p}}\left(s_{n}^{u}\right)^{p_{n+m}}\left(s_{n}^{t}\right)^{q_{n+m}}\right)  \tag{4.77}\\
& =(-1)^{p_{n+m}}\left(-\left(s_{n}^{u}\right)^{p_{n+m-1}}\left(s_{n}^{t}\right)^{q_{n+m-1}},\left(s_{n}^{u}\right)^{p_{n+m}}\left(s_{n}^{t}\right)^{q_{n+m}}\right), \tag{4.78}
\end{align*}
$$

and it is straightforward to obtain the action on a sign-pair over a period as given in the third column of table 4.1.

We are now able to give a criterion for the symmetries of the renormalization strange sets as follows.

Theorem 10. Let $\left(a_{k}\right)_{k \in \mathbb{Z}}, a_{k+p}=a_{k}$ have period $p \geq 1$, with reduced continued fraction $\overline{\mathbf{a}}=\left(\bar{a}_{k}\right)_{k \in \mathbb{Z}}$. Writing $\bar{M}=M_{n+p-1} M_{n+p-2} \ldots M_{n} \bmod 2$, where

$$
M_{i}=\left(\begin{array}{cc}
0 & 1  \tag{4.79}\\
1 & a_{i}
\end{array}\right)
$$

the symmetries of the renormalization strange set are given in terms of $\bar{M}$ as given by table 4.1. In the case when the number of copies of the fundamental set is one or two, the value of the sign-pair $\left(s_{n}^{u}, s_{n}^{t}\right)$ at the start of a block determines the number of copies of the fundamental set.

To prove the theorem we argue as follows. The sets $\beta_{n}\left(\Sigma^{P e r}\right)$ have period $p$, and for $n+k p$ for $k \in \mathbb{Z}$, at the end of a sequence of blocks we will have $M_{n+\ell p-1} M_{n+\ell p-2} \ldots M_{n} \bmod 2=\bar{M}^{\ell}$ for some $\ell \in \mathbb{N}$. Referring now to the fourth column of table 4.1, we see that the number of copies of the fundamental set is given by the number of elements in an invariant sign-pair set, and therefore the number of copies of the fundamental set is given by fifth column of the table. In the cases when 1 or 2 copies of the fundamental set are possible, the precise number is determined by the sign-pair corresponding to initial condition for the generalized Harper equation.

We illustrate these ideas with the period- 1 examples. For $p=1$ and $\mathbf{a}=$ $\left(a_{k}\right)_{k \in \mathbb{Z}}, a_{k}=a$, we have $\bar{M}=A$, if $a$ is even, and $B$, if $a$ is odd. From the fifth column of table 4.1, we see that there are 1 or 2 copies of the fundamental set if $a$ is even and 3 copies if $a$ is odd. This accords with the conclusions
of [46].

### 4.3 Definition and properties of the renormalization strange

 set
### 4.3.1 Definition of the renormalization strange set

We are now in a position to define the renormalization strange set. This we do using the maps $\beta_{n}$ and the sign-pair dynamics discussed above.

Let $\mathbf{a} \in \mathbb{N}^{\mathbb{Z}}$ be periodic, with associated bi-infinite sequence $\omega=\left(\omega_{k}\right)_{k \in \mathbb{Z}}$. For a given $\mathbf{c} \in \Sigma^{P e r}$, we may choose an initial sign-pair $\left(s_{0}^{u}, s_{0}^{t}\right) \in\{+1,-1\}^{2}$ and then define, for each $k \in \mathbb{Z}$, a unique sign-pair $\left(s_{k}^{u}, s_{k}^{t}\right) \in\{+1,-1\}^{2}$ such that for all $L_{b_{k}}\left(s_{k}^{u}, s_{k}^{t}\right)=\left(s_{k+1}^{u}, s_{k+1}^{t}\right)$. Here, as before, $\mathbf{b}=\mathbf{c}+\tilde{\mathbf{c}}$. We may now define strange sets for each $n \in \mathbb{Z}$ as follows.

Theorem 11. There exists a sequence $\mathcal{O}=\left(\mathcal{O}_{k}\right)_{k \in \mathbb{Z}}, \mathcal{O}_{k} \subseteq \mathcal{F}_{k}$, such that for all $n \in \mathbb{Z}, R_{n}\left(\mathcal{O}_{n}\right)=\mathcal{O}_{n+1}$. The sets $\mathcal{O}_{n}$ consists of images $\left(s_{n}^{u}, s_{n}^{t}\right) \beta_{n}(\mathbf{c})$ as c ranges over $\Sigma^{P e r}$ and $\left(s_{n}^{u}, s_{n}^{t}\right) \in\{+1,-1\}^{2}$ is a sign-pair depending on $\mathbf{c}$.

Proof. We may then consider a function-pair $\left(s_{0}^{u}, s_{0}^{t}\right) \beta_{0}(\mathbf{c})$. In view of the discussion in section (4.2.2), not all such function-pairs are members of the renormalization strange set corresponding to the generalized Harper equation. Indeed, whether or not such a function pair is a member of the renormalization strange set is determined by the sign-pair $\left(s_{k}^{u}, s_{k}^{t}\right)$ at the start of a block for the code $\mathbf{c}$. Let us denote by $B_{0}(c)$ the set of sign-pairs $\left(s_{0}^{u}, s_{0}^{t}\right)$ such that for each start of a block, $\left.\left(s_{k}^{u}, s_{k}^{t}\right) \in \mathcal{S}_{k}\right\}$ where $\mathcal{S}_{k}$ is set of sign-pairs
as given in table 4.1. Note that in the case of 1 or 2 copies of the fundamental set, $\mathcal{S}_{k}$ is not unique and consists of either one or two sign-pairs, precisely which sign-pairs being determined by the group element at $k$. (See section 4.2.2.) In view of the analysis in section 4.2.2, if these conditions hold for any one $k$ at the start of a block, then they hold at any other $k$ starting a block. Note that it may be that $k=0$ is not at the beginning of a block for a given $\mathbf{c}$ so it is not convenient to define these sets in terms of the initial sign pair $\left(s_{0}^{u}, s_{0}^{t}\right)$ alone. We may now define the renormalization strange set $\mathcal{O}_{0}=\left\{\left(s_{0}^{u}, s_{0}^{t}\right) \beta_{0}(\mathbf{c}) \mid\left(s_{0}^{u}, s_{0}^{t}\right) \in B_{0}(\mathbf{c}), \mathbf{c} \in \Sigma^{\text {Per }}\right\}$. Similarly, we may define for $n \in \mathbb{Z}, \mathcal{O}_{n}=\left\{\left(s_{n}^{u}, s_{n}^{t}\right) \beta_{n}(\mathbf{c}) \mid\left(s_{0}^{u}, s_{0}^{t}\right) \in B_{0}(\mathbf{c}), \mathbf{c} \in \Sigma^{P e r}\right\}$ (where $\mathcal{O}_{0}$ corresponds to the case $n=0$ ). Again by the analysis of section 4.2.2, the condition that the initial sign pair $\left(s_{0}^{u}, s_{0}^{t}\right) \in B_{0}(\mathbf{c})$ means that all sign pairs $\left(s_{n}^{u}, s_{n}^{t}\right)$ at the start of a block satisfy the conditions that $\left(s_{n}^{u}, s_{n}^{t}\right) \in \mathcal{S}_{n}$. Using the properties of the map $\beta_{n}$ it is straightforward to show that $R_{n}\left(\mathcal{O}_{n}\right) \subseteq \mathcal{O}_{n+1}$.

### 4.3.2 Convergence to the scaled orchid

Recall that the initial condition corresponding to the generalized Harper equation is

$$
\begin{equation*}
u_{1}(x)=1, \quad t_{1}(x)=\frac{1+\alpha \cos \left(2 \pi\left(-\omega_{0} x+\omega_{0} / 2\right)\right)}{\alpha\left(1-\cos \left(2 \pi\left(-\omega_{0} x+\omega_{0}\right)\right)\right)} . \tag{4.80}
\end{equation*}
$$

As in [45] we divide up this initial condition into the numerator and denom-
inator and analyse each separately. Specifically, we write

$$
\begin{gather*}
u_{1}^{1}(x)=1, \quad t_{1}^{1}(x)=\frac{1+\alpha \cos \left(2 \pi\left(-\omega_{0} x+\omega_{0} / 2\right)\right)}{\alpha / 2}  \tag{4.81}\\
u_{1}^{2}(x)=1 \quad t_{1}^{2}(x)=\frac{1}{2\left(1-\cos \left(2 \pi\left(-\omega_{0} x+\omega_{0}\right)\right)\right.} \tag{4.82}
\end{gather*}
$$

Note that from the multiplicative property of $R_{n}$ we have that $\left(u_{n}, t_{n}\right)=$ $\left(u_{n}^{1}, t_{n}^{1}\right)\left(u_{n}^{2}, t_{n}^{2}\right)$ where

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(u_{n}^{1}, t_{n}^{1}\right)=R_{n-1} \ldots R_{1}\left(u_{1}^{1}, t_{1}^{1}\right), \quad\left(u_{n}^{2}, t_{n}^{2}\right)=R_{n-1} \ldots R_{1}\left(u_{1}^{2}, t_{1}^{2}\right) . \tag{4.83}
\end{equation*}
$$

Our first aim is to establish that the pairs $\left(u_{1}^{1}, t_{1}^{1}\right),\left(u_{1}^{2}, t_{1}^{2}\right)$ are invariant under the projection operator.

## Lemma 7.

$$
\begin{align*}
& P_{1}\left(u_{1}^{1}, t_{1}^{1}\right)=\left(u_{1}^{1}, t_{1}^{1}\right),  \tag{4.84}\\
& P_{1}\left(u_{1}^{2}, t_{1}^{2}\right)=\left(u_{1}^{2}, t_{1}^{2}\right) . \tag{4.85}
\end{align*}
$$

Proof. We prove the lemma by direct calculation using the definition of $P_{n}$ given in equation (4.22). Let us first show that $\Delta_{0}^{1}\left(\log \left|\left(u_{1}^{j}, t_{1}^{j}\right)\right|\right)=0$ for $j=1,2$. We make use of the integral identity

$$
\begin{equation*}
\int_{a}^{a+2 \pi / c} \log |1+b \cos (-c x+d)| d x=\frac{2 \pi}{c} \log (|b| / 2) \tag{4.86}
\end{equation*}
$$

valid for $a, b, c, d \in \mathbb{R}$ with $|b| \geq 1, c>0$. Setting $a=1-\omega_{0}^{-1}, b=-1$,
$c=2 \pi \omega_{0}, d=2 \pi \omega_{0}$, we obtain

$$
\begin{align*}
\Delta_{0}^{1}\left(\log \left|\left(u_{1}^{2}, t_{1}^{2}\right)\right|\right) & =\int_{1-\omega_{0}^{-1}}^{1}-\log 2-\log \left|1-\cos \left(2 \pi\left(-\omega_{0} x+\omega_{0}\right)\right)\right| d x \\
& =-\omega_{0}^{-1} \log 2-\omega_{0}^{-1} \log (1 / 2)=0 \tag{4.87}
\end{align*}
$$

and, setting $a=1-\omega_{0}^{-1}, b=\alpha, c=2 \pi \omega_{0}, d=2 \pi \omega_{0} / 2$, we have

$$
\begin{align*}
\Delta_{0}^{1}\left(\log \left|\left(u_{1}^{1}, t_{1}^{1}\right)\right|\right) & =\int_{1-\omega_{0}^{-1}}^{1}-\log (\alpha / 2)+\log \left|1+\alpha \cos \left(2 \pi\left(-\omega_{0} x+\omega_{0} / 2\right)\right)\right| d x \\
& =-\omega_{0}^{-1} \log (\alpha / 2)+\omega_{0}^{-1} \log (\alpha / 2)=0 \tag{4.88}
\end{align*}
$$

We further observe that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Delta_{1}^{1}\left(\log \left|\left(u_{1}^{j}, t_{1}^{j}\right)\right|\right)=\int_{1-\omega_{0}^{-1}}^{1} \frac{d}{d x} \log \left|t_{1}^{j}(x)\right| d x=0 \tag{4.89}
\end{equation*}
$$

for $j=1,2$, since $t_{1}^{j}$ is periodic with period $\omega^{-1}$. In this calculation it is necessary to take account of the logarithmic singularities both within the interval $\left(1-\omega_{0}^{-1}, 1\right)$ and at the endpoints $1-\omega_{0}^{-1}$ and 1 . This completes the proof of the lemma.
4.3.3 Analysis of the zero set of the initial condition $\left(u_{1}^{1}(x), t_{1}^{1}(x)\right)$

In order to show that the renormalization operator converges to a strange set (at least for a countable dense subset of periodic points) we need to analyse the zero set of function pairs $\left(u_{1}^{1}(x), t_{1}^{1}(x)\right)$. The function $u_{1}^{1}(x)=1$, so clearly has no zeros, and the relevant zeros of the function $t_{1}^{1}(x)$ are the
solutions of the equation $1+\alpha \cos \left(2 \pi\left(-\omega_{0} x+\omega_{0} / 2\right)\right)=0$ with $x$ in the range $1-\omega_{0}^{-1} \leq x \leq 1$. As in [45], we write $\alpha^{-1}=\cos 2 \pi r$, where $r$ is a parameter with $0<r<1 / 4$ so that $1<\alpha<\infty$, and we seek solutions of the equation $\cos \left(2 \pi\left(-\omega_{0} x+\omega_{0} / 2\right)\right)=-\cos 2 \pi r$. Thus $x=\left(1-\omega_{0}^{-1}\right) / 2+( \pm r-k) / \omega_{0}$, with $k \in \mathbb{Z}$.

It is straightforward to show that for $0<r<\min \left\{\left(1-\omega_{0}\right) / 2,1 / 4\right\}$, there are precisely two solutions $x_{L}=1 / 2-r / \omega_{0}$ and $x_{U}=1 / 2+r / \omega_{0}$, in the required range with $x_{L}+x_{U}=1-\omega_{0}^{-1}$. Furthermore, for $\left(1-\omega_{0}\right) / 2<r<1 / 4$ (which can only occur when $\left.\omega_{0}>1 / 2\right)$ the solution $x_{U}$ lies outside the required range, but there is one additional solution $x_{U^{\prime}}=1 / 2+(r-1) / \omega_{0}$ satisfying $x_{U^{\prime}}+x_{L}=1$.

For $0<r<1 / 4$, there is a countable dense subset corresponding to those $\alpha$ for which the solutions $x_{L}, x_{U}$ or $x_{L}, x_{U^{\prime}}$ have periodic codes (as defined above). In both cases the codes are partners, as a consequence of Lemma 1. Furthermore, for the case $\left(1-\omega_{0}\right) / 2<r<1 / 4, x_{L}$ and $x_{U^{\prime}}$ correspond to the start of a block (since their sum is 1 ), whilst for $r<1\left(1-\omega_{0}\right) / 2$, $x_{L}$ and $x_{U}$ are not at the start of a block since their sum is $1-\omega_{0}^{-1}$. The precise position in the block depends in general on the values of $r$ and $\omega_{0}$ and a complete analysis is not attempted here. The position in the block determines the sign-pair that applies at the start of the next block, which in turn determines the number of copies of the fundamental set according to the theory in section 4.2.2.

We may summarize the position as follows:

Lemma 8. There is a countable dense subset of $\alpha>1$ for which the initial condition $\left(u_{1}^{1}, t_{1}^{1}\right)=h^{1}(\mathbf{c}) h^{1}(\tilde{\mathbf{c}})\left(\hat{u}_{1}^{1}, \hat{t}_{1}^{1}\right)$ with $\mathbf{c}, \tilde{\mathbf{c}} \in \Sigma^{\text {Per }}$, where

$$
\begin{gather*}
h^{1}(\mathbf{c})=\left(1, x_{L}-x\right),  \tag{4.90}\\
h^{1}(\tilde{\mathbf{c}})= \begin{cases}\left(1, x_{U^{\prime}}-x\right), & 1<\alpha \quad \text { if } \quad \omega_{0}<1 / 2 \\
\left(1, x_{U^{\prime}}-x\right), & 1<\alpha<\left(\cos 2 \pi\left(1-\omega_{0}\right) / 2\right)^{-1} \quad \text { and } \quad \omega_{0}>1 / 2 \\
\left(1, x_{U}-x\right), & \left(\cos 2 \pi\left(1-\omega_{0}\right) / 2\right)^{-1}<\alpha \quad \text { and } \quad \omega_{0}>1 / 2\end{cases} \tag{4.91}
\end{gather*}
$$

and $\left(\hat{u}_{1}^{1}, \hat{t}_{1}^{1}\right) \neq 0$ on $\bar{V}_{1}^{n} \times \bar{V}_{0}^{n}$ and $\left(\hat{u}_{1}^{1}, \hat{t}_{1}^{1}\right)>0$ on $\bar{V}_{1}^{n} \times \bar{V}_{0}^{n} \cap \mathbb{R}^{2}$.

### 4.3.4 Analysis of the zero set of the initial condition $\left(u_{1}^{2}, t_{1}^{2}\right)$

We now turn to the denominator of the initial condition $\left(u_{1}, t_{1}\right)$. We shall see that its function is merely to scale the renormalization strange set given by the numerator rather than to alter its fundamental structure. Indeed, due to the multiplicative structure of the renormalization transformation $R_{n}$, we may analyse $\left(u_{1}^{2}, t_{1}^{2}\right)$ separately, and its structure is given by the dynamics of its poles, or rather, the zeros of the denominator in the interval $I_{0}$. The pole structure is straightforward to determine. Again $u_{1}^{2}=1$ is without singularities and $t_{1}^{2}(x)$ has poles of order 2 at $x=1$ and $1-\omega_{0}^{-1}$. Applying the renormalization transformation $R_{j-1} \ldots R_{1}$, gives that, for $j \geq 2, u_{j}^{2}$ has a pole of order 2 at $-\omega_{j}^{-1}$ and $t_{j}^{2}$ has a pole of order 2 at 1 . A consequence is that the denominator converges to a periodic function of period $p$, the period of $\omega_{0}$. Indeed, we have the following result, the proof of which we omit.

Proposition 4. There exists a period-p function pair $\left(u^{*}, t^{*}\right)$ which is periodic of period $p$ under the renormalization transformation $R_{n}$, such that, under iteration of the renormalization transformation,

$$
\begin{equation*}
R_{j-1} \ldots R_{1}\left(u_{1}^{2}, t_{1}^{2}\right) / R_{j-1} \ldots R_{1}\left(u^{*}, t^{*}\right) \tag{4.92}
\end{equation*}
$$

converges to $(1,1)$.

The function pair $\left(u^{*}, t^{*}\right)$ corresponds to the strong-coupling fixed point in the golden-mean case, and the proof of the proposition is similar to that contained in $[45,9]$.

### 4.3.5 Proof of Theorem 12

For a dense set of initial conditions (corresponding to periodic codes) the dynamics under the renormalization transformation converges to a scaled version of the renormalization strange set. Specifically, we have:

Theorem 12. Let $\omega=\omega_{0}$ have periodic continued fraction expansion $\left[\overline{a_{1}, \ldots a_{p}}\right]$ with period $p \geq 1$, and let $\left(\omega_{n}\right)_{n \in \mathbb{Z}}$ be the associated $p$-periodic sequence $\boldsymbol{\omega}=\left(\omega_{k}\right)_{k \in \mathbb{Z}}$ with periodic continued fraction $\mathbf{a}=\left(a_{k}\right)_{k \in \mathbb{Z}}$. Then there exist a dense set of $\alpha$ in the range $\alpha>1$ such that iteration of the associated renormalization operator $R_{n}$, for $n \geq 0$, converges to $\mathcal{O}_{n}^{*}$, where $\mathcal{O}_{n}^{*}$ is the set $\mathcal{O}_{n}$ scaled by a function-pair $\left(u_{n}^{*}, t_{n}^{*}\right)$ of period a multiple of $p$.

Proof. From Lemma 8 there is a countable dense set of $\alpha>1$ for which $\left(u_{1}^{1}, t_{1}^{1}\right)$ has the structure given by the lemma, where $\mathbf{c}, \tilde{\mathbf{c}}$ are partners in
$\Sigma^{\text {Per }}$. Because the structure of $h^{1}(\mathbf{c})$ and $h^{1}(\tilde{\mathbf{c}})$ correspond to (4.33) with $c_{0}$ and $\tilde{c}_{0} \neq 0$, which may not be the case, we iterate once, and consider $\left(u_{2}, t_{2}\right)=R_{1}\left(u_{1}, t_{1}\right)$. We have $\left(u_{2}, t_{2}\right) /\left(\left(u_{2}^{*}, t_{2}^{*}\right) \beta_{2}(\mathbf{c})\right)$ satisfies the hypothesis of Lemma 4. Here $\left(u_{2}^{*}, t_{2}^{*}\right)=L_{b_{1}}(+1,+1) R_{1}\left(u^{*}, t^{*}\right)$ which is of period a multiple of $p$. Theorem 3 follows.

### 4.4 Reformulation in terms of sequence spaces

In our analysis we construct several objects indexed by an integer $n$, which it is convenient to regard as 'time'. In order to simplify our expressions, we may reformulate our results in terms of bi-infinite sequences. Recall that we consider a fixed bi-infinite period- $p$ sequence a of continued-fraction entries, which gives rise to a periodic sequence $\boldsymbol{\omega}=\left(\omega_{n}\right)_{n \in \mathbb{Z}}$. All our constructions are implicitly dependent on a and, to simplify notation, we often suppress explicit dependence. First, we adopt the convention that for a object $X_{n}$ indexed by $n \in \mathbb{Z}$, the corresponding symbol without an index (either in bold type face or otherwise) denotes the associated bi-infinite sequence, so that, for example, $X=\left(X_{n}\right)_{n \in \mathbb{Z}}$. Let us also adopt the general convention that $\sigma$ denotes the left shift map so that, when considering a bi-infinite sequence of objects $X=\left(X_{n}\right)_{n \in \mathbb{Z}}$, the expression $X_{\sigma}$ denotes the bi-infinite sequence $\left(X_{n+1}\right)_{n \in \mathbb{Z}}$. This convention is needed because the renormalization transformations $R_{n}$ take a function pair $\left(u_{n}, t_{n}\right) \in \mathcal{F}_{n}$ to the function pair $\left(u_{n+1}, t_{n+1}\right) \in \mathcal{F}_{n+1}$, so that the induced map $R$ on $\mathcal{F}=\left(\mathcal{F}_{n}\right)_{n \in \mathbb{Z}}$ is defined $R: \mathcal{F} \rightarrow \mathcal{F}_{\sigma}$, and, defining $P=\left(P_{n}\right)_{n \in \mathbb{Z}}$, the equation $R_{n} P_{n}=P_{n+1} R$ becomes $R P=P_{\sigma} R$.

We are now in a position to reformulate our results as follows. We construct a map $\mathcal{E}: \Sigma^{P e r} \rightarrow \mathcal{F}, \mathcal{E}=\left(\mathcal{E}_{n}\right)_{n \in \mathbb{Z}}$, such that for all sequences of sign-pairs $\left(s^{u}, s^{t}\right)=\left(\left(s_{n}^{u}, s_{n}^{t}\right)_{n \in \mathbb{Z}}\right)$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
R\left(\left(s^{u}, s^{t}\right) \mathcal{E}\right)=\kappa\left(s^{u}, s^{t}\right) \mathcal{E}_{\sigma} \tag{4.93}
\end{equation*}
$$

where, for a given $\mathbf{c} \in \Sigma^{P e r}, \kappa:\{-1,+1\}^{\mathbb{Z}} \rightarrow\{-1,+1\}^{\mathbb{Z}}$ is given by $\kappa_{n}\left(s^{u}, s^{t}\right)=\kappa_{c_{n}}\left(s_{n}^{u}, s_{n}^{t}\right)$. Noting that the partnering operation extends straightforwardly to bi-infinite sequences, we have a map $\beta: \Sigma^{P e r} \rightarrow \mathcal{F}$ and a map $L:\{-1,+1\}^{\mathbb{Z}} \rightarrow\{-1,+1\}^{\mathbb{Z}}$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
R\left(\left(s^{u}, s^{t}\right) \beta\right)=L\left(s^{u}, s^{t}\right) \beta_{\sigma} \tag{4.94}
\end{equation*}
$$

where, for $\mathbf{a} \in \Sigma^{P e r}, L:\{-1,+1\}^{\mathbb{Z}} \rightarrow\{-1,+1\}^{\mathbb{Z}}$ is given by $L\left(s^{u}, s^{t}\right)=$ $L_{b_{n}}\left(s_{n}^{u}, s_{n}^{t}\right)$ and $\mathbf{b}=\mathbf{c}+\tilde{\mathbf{c}}$.

Let us call a sequence $\left(s^{u}, s^{t}\right) \in\{-1,+1\}^{\mathbb{Z}}$ compatible with a given sequence c if $L\left(s^{u}, s^{t}\right)=\left(s^{u}, s^{t}\right)_{\sigma}$. Then, it follows from section 4.2.2 above that, letting c range over $\Sigma^{P e r}$, the set of compatible sequences so obtained is partitioned into two disjoint sets if a contains at least one odd entry or into three disjoint sets if a contains only even entries. Precisely one of these sets contains the sign pair $(+1,+1)$ at the start of blocks, and we denote by $B(\mathbf{c})$ the set of such $\left(s^{u}, s^{t}\right)$ for a given $\mathbf{c}$. We may now define invariant strange sets by setting $\mathcal{O}=\left\{\left(s^{u}, s^{t}\right) \beta(\mathbf{c})\right\}$, where $\left(s^{u}, s^{t}\right)$ ranges over the permitted sign pairs $O S(\mathbf{c})$ and $\mathbf{c}$ ranges over $\Sigma^{P e r}$. Then $\mathcal{O}=\left(\mathcal{O}_{n}\right)_{n \in \mathbb{Z}}$, where $\mathcal{O}_{n}$ is the renormalization strange set defined above. The set $\mathcal{O}$ satisfies $R(\mathcal{O})=\mathcal{O}_{\sigma}$.

In section 5.4 below we give an alternative formulation in which we conjecture a structure theory for all irrational $\omega$.

### 4.5 Numerical study

Here we study numerically the evolution of a pair of functions $(u(x), t(x))$ iterating over the renormalization operator (3.83). At each iteration a projection is performed in order to remove unstable eigenvectors to ensure convergence. The projection operator, $P_{n}$, is given by (4.4). The resulting renormalization strange set $\left(u_{n}(x), t_{n}(x)\right)$, is evaluated at $(0,0)$ to produce the two-dimensional projections shown.

Below is a summary of results for periodic continued fractions.

### 4.5.1 The golden mean case, $\omega=[1,1,1, \ldots]$.

- This is the orchid discovered numerically by Ketoja and Satija.
- Mestel and Osbaldestin give a description of the orchid in terms of a code space and sign pairs.
- Found to consist of three copies of a fundamental set figure (4.2) which is the embeding of the model space into function pair space.


Fig. 4.1: The orchid, $\omega=[1,1,1, \ldots]$

### 4.5.2 Fixed $a$ case $\omega=[a, a, a, \ldots]$.

- For each value of $a$ an orchid like structure is present.
- Sign pairs dictate the transitions between components of these structures.
- It is revealed that for $a$ odd the orchid consists of three copies of a fundamental set. This is shown for the case $a=1$ where the orchid (figure 4.1) consists of three copies of the fundamental set given in figure 4.2, while for the case $a=3$ we have figure 4.5 which is made up of three copies of the corresponding fundamental set figure 4.6.
- For $a$ even it is found that the orchid consists of two copies of a fundamental set. This is shown in figure 4.3 which consists of two copies of the fundamental set given in figure 4.4.


Fig. 4.2: Fundamental set for $\omega=[1,1,1, \ldots]$

- This example was discussed in section 4.2.2.


Fig. 4.3: Renormalization strange set for $\omega=[2,2,2, \ldots]$.


Fig. 4.4: Fundamental set for $\omega=[2,2,2, \ldots]$.


Fig. 4.5: Renormalization strange set for $\omega=[3,3,3, \ldots]$.


Fig. 4.6: Fundamental set for $\omega=[3,3,3, \ldots]$.
4.5.3 Periodic case $\omega=\left[\overline{a_{1}, \ldots, a_{p}}\right], \mathbf{a}=\left(a_{k}\right)_{k \in \mathbb{Z}}, a_{k+p}=a_{k}$

Here we present the numerical results for period 2, 3, 4, and 5 continued fractions consisting of 1's and 2's only. Higher entries in the continued fraction expansion are found to cause greater numerical error.

Taking a closer look at the period 2 case, with continued fraction $\omega=[\overline{1,2}]$, we find that the period 2 orchid (figure 4.8) consists of two copies of each of the fundamental sets given in figure (4.7) with orientation given by the corresponding sign-pairs. We find the following permitted sign-pairs:

$$
\begin{array}{cc}
n \text { even } & n \text { odd } \\
(-1,-1) & (+1,+1) \\
(+1,-1) & (+1,-1)
\end{array}
$$

Thus for $n$ even we have two copies of the fundamental set for $n$ even corresponding to the sign-pairs $(-1,-1)$ and $(+1,-1)$ and for $n$ odd we have two copies of the fundamental set for $n$ odd corresponding to the sign-pairs $(+1,+1)$ and $(+1,-1)$. These four fundamental sets are combined in figure (4.8).

Recall table 4.1, which, for convenience, we reproduce here.
Now, recalling the theory of section 4.2.2, the following table lists the group element $\bar{M}$ as defined in that section. Note that when $\omega=[\overline{1,2}]$, we have $\mathbf{a}=\left(a_{k}\right)_{k \in \mathbb{Z}}$ with $a_{k}=2, k$ even, $a_{k}=1$ otherwise. Thus

$$
\begin{array}{rlrl}
n & \equiv 0 & n \equiv 1 \\
B A & =A B^{2} & A B
\end{array}
$$

This table is easily seen to correspond to the sign-pairs given above.

| Element <br> $\bar{M}$ | Order | Action on <br> sign-pair <br> $\left(s^{u}, s^{t}\right)$ | Invariant sign-pair sets <br> other than $\{(-1,1)\}$. | Number of <br> copies of <br> fundamental set |
| :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- |
| $I$ | 1 | $\left(s^{u}, s^{t}\right)$ | $\{(1,1)\},\{(1,-1)\},\{(-1,-1)\}$ | 1 |
| $B$ | 3 | $\left(-s^{t},-s^{u} s^{t}\right)$ | $\{(1,1),(1,-1),(-1,-1)\}$ | 3 |
| $B^{2}$ | 3 | $\left(s^{u} s^{t},-s^{u}\right)$ | $\{(1,1),(1,-1),(-1,-1)\}$ | 3 |
| $A$ | 2 | $\left(-s^{t},-s^{u}\right)$ | $\{(1,1),(-1,-1)\},\{(1,-1)\}$ | 1 or 2 |
| $A B$ | 2 | $\left(s^{u} s^{t}, s^{t}\right)$ | $\{(1,-1),(-1,-1)\},\{(1,1)\}$ | 1 or 2 |
| $A B^{2}$ | 2 | $\left(s^{u},-s^{u} s^{t}\right)$ | $\{(1,1),(1,-1)\},\{(-1,-1)\}$ | 1 or 2 |

Tab. 4.2: Action of group elements on sign-pairs.

The fundamental sets in figure (4.7) were obtained by using the sign-pair $(-1,+1)$ which is invariant under the block to block transitions. The fundamental set in figure (4.7) (left) corresponds to $n$ odd and is given in the period 2 renormalization strange set figure (4.8) with orientation given by the sign-pairs $(+1,+1)$ and $(+1,-1)$. This is easily seen since the transformation $(-1,+1) \rightarrow(+1,+1)$ and $(-1,+1) \rightarrow(+1,-1)$ are given by a reflection in the $x$-axis and in both the $x$ and $y$ axes respectively.

Similarly the fundamental set figure (4.7) (right) corresponds to $n$ even and is shown in figure (4.8) with orientations given by sign-pairs $(-1,-1)$ and $(+1,-1)$. As before this is easily seen by noting that the transformations $(-1,+1) \rightarrow(-1,-1)$ and $(-1,+1) \rightarrow(+1,-1)$ are given by a reflection in the $y$ axis and in both the $x$ and $y$ axes respectively.

We now turn to the case $\omega=[\overline{1,1,2}]$. The renormalization strange set shown in figure (4.9) is a combination of the sets shown in figures (4.10-4.12) which are for $n \equiv 0,1,2(\bmod 3)$. Iterating $L_{b_{n}}$ we find that starting with $n=0$ with the sign-pair $(+1,+1)$, the following are the permitted sign-pairs:

$$
\begin{array}{ccc}
n \equiv 0 & n \equiv 1 & n \equiv 2 \\
(+1,+1) & (-1,-1) & (+1,-1)
\end{array}
$$

Note that in this case there is no need for re-orientation of the figures (4.104.12) since they were not generated by the invariant sign-pair $(-1,+1)$.

We remark that it is possible to obtain renormalization strange sets with two copies of the fundamental sets by starting the map $L_{b_{n}}$ at $n=0$ with the sign-pair $(-1,-1)$ or $(+1,-1)$. In this case the permitted sign-pairs are given by the following table:

$$
\begin{array}{ccc}
n \equiv 0 & n \equiv 1 & n \equiv 2 \\
(-1,-1) & (+1,+1) & (-1,-1) \\
(+1,-1) & (1,-1) & (+1,+1)
\end{array}
$$

We note that this accords with the theory of section 4.2.2. For, as above, $\bar{M}$ is given by

$$
\begin{array}{ccc}
n \equiv 0 & n \equiv 1 & n \equiv 2 \\
B^{2} A=A B & A B^{2} & A B A=A
\end{array}
$$

For $\omega=[\overline{1,1,1,2}]$, we have two copies of the fundamental sets for each of the residual classes $n=0,1,2,3(\bmod 4)$, corresponding to the following permitted sign-pairs:

$$
\begin{array}{cccc}
n \equiv 0 & n \equiv 1 & n \equiv 2 & n \equiv 3 \\
(-1,-1) & (+1,+1) & (1,-1) & (+1,+1) \\
(+1,+1) & (-1,-1) & (-1,-1) & (+1,-1)
\end{array}
$$

Inspecting the sign-pairs in the above table we have the following symmetries, for $n \equiv 0$ reflection in $x$ and $y$ axes, for $n \equiv 1$ reflection in $x$ and $y$ axes, for $n \equiv 2$ reflection in $x$ axis, and for $n \equiv 3$ reflection in $y$ axis. These symmetries and the order can be clearly seen in figures (4.14-4.17).

This result agrees with the theory in 4.2 .2 . For we have the following table listing the group element $\bar{M}$ in that section.

$$
\begin{array}{cccc}
n \equiv 0 & n \equiv 1 & n \equiv 2 & n \equiv 3 \\
A B^{3}=A & B^{3} A=A & B^{2} A B=A B^{2} & B A B^{2}=A B
\end{array}
$$

which corresponds to the sign-pairs given above.
Similarly for the case $\omega=[\overline{1,1,1,1,2}]$ the period 5 renormalization strange set, figure (4.18), consists of two copies of each of the fundamental sets figures (4.19-4.23) which correspond to each of the residual classes $n \equiv$ $0,1,2,3,4(\bmod 5)$. Iteration of the sign-pair $(+1,-1)$ starting with $n=0$ gives the permitted sign-pairs in this case to be:

$$
\begin{array}{ccccc}
n \equiv 0 & n \equiv 1 & n \equiv 2 & n \equiv 3 & n \equiv 4 \\
(1,-1) & (+1,-1) & (+1,+1) & (-1,-1) & (+1,-1) \\
(+1,+1) & (-1,-1) & (+1,-1) & (+1,+1) & (-1,-1)
\end{array}
$$

with the following symmetries, for $n \equiv 0$ reflection in $y$ axis, for $n \equiv 1$ reflection in $x$ axis, for $n \equiv 2$ reflection in $y$ axis, for $n \equiv 3$ reflection in $x$ and $y$ axes, and for $n \equiv 4$ reflection in the $x$ axis.

Again, this result agrees with the theory in section 4.2.2. For we have the following table listing the group element $\bar{M}$ in that section.

$$
\begin{array}{rlcccc}
n & \equiv 0 & n \equiv 1 & n \equiv 2 & n \equiv 3 & n \equiv 4 \\
B^{4} A & =A B^{2} & A B^{4}=A B & B A B^{3}=A B^{2} & B^{2} A B^{2}=A & B^{3} A B=A B
\end{array}
$$

which corresponds to the sign-pairs given above.
Obtaining the renormalization strange sets for higher period becomes difficult numerically due to the build up of error in the projection. Hence the orchid corresponding to period 3, 4, and 5, (figures 4.9, 4.13, and 4.18) become increasingly fuzzy. The reasons for the build up of numerical error are as follows.

- Firstly the evolution of the zeros and the rotation number are governed by the map $G_{n}$ and the Gauss map $\gamma$. These maps are both chaotic which leads to the build up of numerical error.
- The renormalization strange sets are repellors in function-pair space because of the expanding eigenvalues and therefore a projection is needed to prevent divergence. This projection is increasingly hard to calculate as the period of the continued fraction $\omega$ increases, this can be seen in appendix F .
- The operator $R_{n}$ becomes increasingly complex for large $a_{n}$ which makes the program increasingly inefficient and makes it difficult to take polynomial approximations.


Fig. 4.7: Fundamental sets for $\omega=[\overline{1,2}]$.


Fig. 4.8: Renormalization strange set for period $2 \omega=[\overline{1,2}]$.


Fig. 4.9: Renormalization strange set for period $3 \omega=[\overline{1,1,2}]$.


Fig. 4.10: Fundamental set for period $3 \omega=[1,1,2]$.


Fig. 4.11: Fundamental set for period $3 \omega=[\overline{1,1,2}]$.


Fig. 4.12: Fundamental set for period $3 \omega=[1,1,2]$.


Fig. 4.13: Renormalization strange set for period $4 \omega=[\overline{1,1,1,2}]$.


Fig. 4.14: Renormalization strange set, $n \equiv 0$, for period $4 \omega=[\overline{1,1,1,2}]$.


Fig. 4.15: Renormalization strange set, $n \equiv 1$, for period $4 \omega=[\overline{1,1,1,2}]$.


Fig. 4.16: Renormalization strange set, $n \equiv 2$, for period $4 \omega=[\overline{1,1,1,2}]$.


Fig. 4.17: Renormalization strange set, $n \equiv 3$, for period $4 \omega=[\overline{1,1,1,2}]$.


Fig. 4.18: Renormalization strange set for period $5 \omega=[1,1,1,1,2]$.


Fig. 4.19: Renormalization strange set, $n \equiv 0$, for period $5 \omega=[\overline{1,1,1,1,2}]$.


Fig. 4.20: Renormalization strange set, $n \equiv 1$, for period $5 \omega=[1,1,1,1,2]$.


Fig. 4.21: Renormalization strange set, $n \equiv 2$, for period $5 \omega=[\overline{1,1,1,1,2}]$.


Fig. 4.22: Renormalization strange set, $n \equiv 3$, for period $5 \omega=[\overline{1,1,1,1,2}]$.


Fig. 4.23: Renormalization strange set, $n \equiv 4$, for period $5 \omega=[\overline{1,1,1,1,2}]$.

## 5. GENERAL CONTINUED FRACTIONS

We now consider general continued fractions and give some conjectures based on work of Mestel and Osbaldestin on a the likely structure of the renormalization strange set.

### 5.1 Number theoretical preliminaries

Let $I_{*}=(0,1) \backslash \mathbb{Q}$, the irrationals in the unit interval, and let $\gamma: I_{*} \rightarrow I_{*}$ be the Gauss map,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\gamma(x)=\left\{\frac{1}{x}\right\}=\frac{1}{x}-\left[\frac{1}{x}\right] . \tag{5.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

For a general continued fraction $\omega \in(0,1)$, we define $\omega_{0}=\omega$ and for $n \geq 1$, $\omega_{n}=\gamma\left(\omega_{n-1}\right)$. Setting, for $n \geq 1$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
a_{n}=\left[\frac{1}{\omega_{n-1}}\right], \tag{5.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

then we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\omega_{n}=\left[a_{n+1}, a_{n+2}, a_{n+3}, \ldots\right] \tag{5.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

with convergents $p_{n} / q_{n}$ given by the recurrence relations (A.3).

Definition. Let $\mathbf{C}: \mathbb{N}^{\mathbb{Z}} \rightarrow I_{*}^{\mathbb{Z}}$ be given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathbf{C}(\mathbf{a})=\left(\omega_{n}=\left[a_{n+1}, a_{n+2}, \ldots\right]\right)_{n \in \mathbb{Z}}, \tag{5.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\mathbf{a}=\left(a_{n}\right)_{n \in \mathbb{Z}}$.

The map $\mathbf{C}$ is a continuous.

Extending the Gauss map we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\gamma: I_{*}^{\mathbb{Z}} \rightarrow I_{*}^{\mathbb{Z}}, \quad \gamma\left(\left(\omega_{n}\right)_{n \in \mathbb{Z}}\right)=\left(\gamma(\omega)_{n}\right)_{n \in \mathbb{Z}}, \tag{5.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\mathbf{C} \circ \sigma=\gamma \circ \mathbf{C}$ so that the following diagram commutes


## 5.2 function spaces

Let $\omega=\left(\omega_{n}\right)_{n \in \mathbb{Z}} \in I_{*}^{\mathbb{Z}}$. For $c \in \mathbb{C}$ and $r>0$, let $D(c, r)$ denote the disc centered at $c$ with radius $r$. Let $V_{1}^{n}=D\left(c_{1}^{n}, r_{1}^{n}\right)$ and $V_{0}^{n}=D\left(c_{0}^{n}, r_{0}^{n}\right)$ be the discs in $\mathbb{C}$ where

$$
\begin{equation*}
c_{0}^{n}=1-\frac{\omega_{n-1}^{-1}}{2}, \quad r_{0}^{n}=\frac{\omega_{n-1}^{-1}}{2}, \quad c_{1}^{n}=\frac{1}{2}-\omega_{n-1}^{-1}, \quad r_{1}^{n}=\frac{1}{2} \tag{5.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

The function spaces $\mathcal{F}_{n}$ are defined by:

$$
\begin{array}{r}
\mathcal{F}_{n}=\left\{(u, t): u: V_{1}^{n} \rightarrow \mathbb{C}, t: V_{0}^{n} \rightarrow \mathbb{C}, u, t\right. \text { real analytic and } \\
\left.\|(u, t)\|=\|u\|_{1}+\|t\|_{1}<\infty\right\} \tag{5.7}
\end{array}
$$

so that we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
R_{n}: \mathcal{F}_{n} \rightarrow \mathcal{F}_{n+1} \tag{5.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

### 5.3 Extension to sequence space

Let $\mathbf{a} \in \mathbb{N}^{\mathbb{Z}}$ be fixed, and let $\boldsymbol{\omega}=\left(\omega_{n}\right)_{n \in \mathbb{Z}}=\mathbf{C}(\mathbf{a})$. All the following constructions are either explicitly or implicitly dependent on $\mathbf{a}$. Let $\mathcal{F}=\mathcal{F}(\mathbf{a})$ $=\left(\mathcal{F}_{n}\right)_{n \in \mathbb{Z}}$, where $\mathcal{F}_{n}$ is as above. Let $\mathcal{F}^{a}$ be the extended function-pair sequence space

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathcal{F}^{a}=\{(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{h}) \mid \mathbf{h} \in \mathcal{F}(\mathbf{a})\} . \tag{5.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

We may define an extended renormalization map $\mathbf{R}$. Let

$$
\begin{equation*}
(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{h})=\left(\left(a_{n}\right)_{n \in \mathbb{Z}},\left(h_{n}\right)_{n \in \mathbb{Z}}\right) \in \mathcal{F}^{a} . \tag{5.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathbf{R}(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{h})=(\sigma(\mathbf{a}), \mathbf{R}(\mathbf{h})) \tag{5.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\mathbf{R}(\mathbf{h})=\left(R_{n}\left(h_{n}\right)\right)_{n \in \mathbb{Z}}$, and $R_{n}$ is as is usual. Note that $R_{n}\left(h_{n}\right) \in$ $\mathcal{F}_{n+1}(\mathbf{a})=\mathcal{F}_{n}(\sigma(\mathbf{a}))$.

We can reformulate this map in terms of $\boldsymbol{\omega}$. Let $\mathcal{F}^{\omega}=\{(\boldsymbol{\omega}, \mathbf{h}) \mid \mathbf{h} \in \mathcal{F}(\boldsymbol{\omega})\}$
where $\mathcal{F}(\boldsymbol{\omega})=\left(\mathcal{F}_{n}\right)_{n \in \mathbb{Z}}$ and $\mathcal{F}_{n}$ is the function space with parameters $\omega_{n-1}$. We can define $\mathbf{R}: \mathcal{F}^{\omega} \rightarrow \mathcal{F}^{\omega}$ by $\mathbf{R}(\boldsymbol{\omega}, \mathbf{h})=(\gamma(\boldsymbol{\omega}), \mathbf{R}(\mathbf{h}))$, and $\mathbf{R}(\mathbf{h})=$ $\left(R_{n}\left(h_{n}\right)\right)_{n \in \mathbb{Z}}$ where
$R_{n}\left(u_{n}(x), t_{n}(x)\right)=\left(t_{n}\left(-\gamma\left(\omega_{n}\right) x\right),\left(\prod_{i=0}^{a_{n}-1} t_{n}\left(-\gamma\left(\omega_{n}\right) x-i\right)\right) u_{n}\left(-\gamma\left(\omega_{n}\right) x-a_{n}\right)\right)$
and where $a_{n}=\left[\omega_{n}^{-1}\right]$.

### 5.4 Conjectures

Let $\mathbf{a} \in \mathbb{N}^{\mathbb{Z}}$ be fixed. All the following constructions are either explicitly or implicitly dependent on a.

Define the code space

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Sigma_{M}(\mathbf{a})=\left\{\mathbf{c}=\left(c_{i}\right)_{i \in \mathbb{Z}}: c_{i} \in\left\{0,1, \ldots, a_{i}\right\}, c_{i}=a_{i} \Longrightarrow c_{i-1}=0\right\}, \tag{5.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Sigma_{E}=\left\{\{\mathbf{a}\} \times \Sigma_{M}(\mathbf{a})\right\} . \tag{5.14}
\end{equation*}
$$

We extend the shift map $\sigma$ in the obvious way.
For each $a \in \mathbb{N}$ and $b \in \mathbb{N}_{0}$, we define the map $L_{a, b}:\{-1,+1\}^{2} \rightarrow\{-1,+1\}^{2}$ by

$$
\begin{equation*}
L_{a, b}\left(s^{u}, s^{t}\right)=\left(s^{t},(-1)^{b}\left(s^{t}\right)^{a_{n}} s^{u}\right) . \tag{5.15}
\end{equation*}
$$

Let us now consider a biinfinite sequence of sign-pairs: $\mathbf{s}=\left(s_{i}^{u}, s_{i}^{t}\right)_{i \in \mathbb{Z}}$, and,
in a slight abuse of notation, we may write, $\mathbf{s}=\left(\mathbf{s}^{u}, \mathbf{s}^{t}\right)$, where $\mathbf{s}^{u}=\left(s_{i}^{u}\right)_{i \in \mathbb{Z}}$ and $\mathbf{s}^{t}=\left(s_{i}^{t}\right)_{i \in \mathbb{Z}}$. For a given $(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{c}) \in \Sigma_{E}$, we define $\mathbf{L}_{\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{c}}:\{-1,+1\}^{\mathbb{Z}} \rightarrow$ $\{-1,+1\}^{\mathbb{Z}}$ by

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathbf{L}_{\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{c}}(\mathbf{s})=\left(L_{a_{i}, b_{i}}\left(s_{i}^{u}, s_{i}^{t}\right)\right)_{i \in \mathbb{Z}} \tag{5.16}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $b_{i}=c_{i}+\tilde{c}_{i} \bmod 2$ and $\mathbf{s}=\left(s_{i}^{u}, s_{i}^{t}\right)_{i \in \mathbb{Z}}$.
We call a sign-pair sequence $\mathbf{s}$ compatible with $(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{c})$ if $\mathbf{L}_{\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{c}}(\mathbf{s})=\sigma(\mathbf{s})$ where $\sigma$ is the usual left-shift map.

Let us now define an extended model space

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Sigma_{E}^{e}=\{(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{c}, \mathbf{s}) \mid \mathbf{s} \text { is compatible with }(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{c})\}, \tag{5.17}
\end{equation*}
$$

and let $\sigma$ denote the usual shift.

Conjecture 1. There exists an onto continuous map $\beta: \Sigma_{E}^{e} \rightarrow \mathcal{F}^{a}$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
R(\beta(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{c}, \mathbf{s}))=\beta(\sigma(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{c}, \mathbf{s})) \tag{5.18}
\end{equation*}
$$

so that the following commutative diagram holds.


The map is two-to-one with $\beta(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{c}, \mathbf{s})=\beta\left(\mathbf{a}^{\prime}, \mathbf{c}^{\prime}, \mathbf{s}^{\prime}\right)$ if and only if $\mathbf{a}=\mathbf{a}^{\prime}$, $\mathbf{s}=\mathbf{s}^{\prime}$, and $\mathbf{c}=\mathbf{c}^{\prime}$ or $\tilde{\mathbf{c}}^{\prime}$.

The model space $\Sigma_{E}^{e}$ splits into two disjoint pieces that are invariant under $\sigma$, viz., $\Sigma_{E}^{O}$ and $\Sigma_{E}^{B}$, i.e., satisfying $\sigma\left(\Sigma_{E}^{O}\right)=\Sigma_{E}^{O}$ and $\sigma\left(\Sigma_{E}^{B}\right)=\Sigma_{E}^{B}$. The space $\Sigma_{E}^{O}$ is the model for the orchid-like sets and corresponds to those sequence-triples $(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{c}, \mathbf{s})$ for which $\left(s_{i}^{u}, s_{i}^{t}\right) \in\{(+1,+1),(-1,-1),(+1,-1)\}$ for each $i$ at the start of a block (as defined for the partnering operation). $\Sigma_{E}^{O}$ consists of the remainder of $\Sigma_{E}^{B}$. Likewise the images $\beta\left(\Sigma_{E}^{O}\right)$ and $\beta\left(\Sigma_{E}^{B}\right)$ are disjoint. The first is a renormalization strange set $\mathcal{O}$ corresponding to the orchid-flower for the special case of golden-mean $\omega$. We have $\mathbf{R}(\mathcal{O})=(\mathcal{O})$ and $\mathbf{R}$ is chaotic on $\mathcal{O}$.

In terms of $\omega$ the conjecture becomes as follows:

Conjecture 2. There exists an onto continuous map $\beta: \Sigma_{E}^{e} \rightarrow \mathcal{F}^{\omega}$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
R(\beta(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{c}, \mathbf{s}))=\beta(\sigma(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{c}, \mathbf{s})), \tag{5.19}
\end{equation*}
$$

so that the following commutative diagram holds.


The map is two-to-one with $\beta(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{c}, \mathbf{s})=\beta\left(\mathbf{a}^{\prime}, \mathbf{c}^{\prime}, \mathbf{s}^{\prime}\right)$ if and only if $\mathbf{a}=\mathbf{a}^{\prime}$, $\mathbf{s}=\mathbf{s}^{\prime}$, and $\mathbf{c}=\mathbf{c}^{\prime}$ or $\tilde{\mathbf{c}}^{\prime}$.

The model space $\Sigma_{E}^{e}$ splits into two disjoint pieces that are invariant under $\sigma$, viz., $\Sigma_{E}^{O}$ and $\Sigma_{E}^{B}$, i.e., satisfying $\sigma\left(\Sigma_{E}^{O}\right)=\Sigma_{E}^{O}$ and $\sigma\left(\Sigma_{E}^{B}\right)=\Sigma_{E}^{B}$. The space $\Sigma_{E}^{O}$ is the model for the orchid-like sets and corresponds to those sequence-triples
( $\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{c}, \mathbf{s})$ for which $\left(s_{i}^{u}, s_{i}^{t}\right) \in\{(+1,+1),(-1,-1),(+1,-1)\}$ for each $i$ at the start of a block (as defined for the partnering operation). $\Sigma_{E}^{O}$ consists of the remainder of $\Sigma_{E}^{B}$. Likewise the images $\beta\left(\Sigma_{E}^{O}\right)$ and $\beta\left(\Sigma_{E}^{B}\right)$ are disjoint. The first is a renormalization strange set $\mathcal{O}$ corresponding to the orchid-flower for the special case of golden-mean $\omega$. We have $\mathbf{R}(\mathcal{O})=(\mathcal{O})$ and $\mathbf{R}$ is chaotic on $\mathcal{O}$.

## 6. DISCUSSION AND CONCLUSIONS

In this thesis we have used renormalization methods, based on those of Mestel, Osbaldestin and coworkers, to analyse fluctuations for quasiperiodic systems. We have applied the theory to the fluctuations in a generalized Harper equation in the strong-coupling limit. For quadratic-irrational $\omega$, we have constructed a dense set of points in the renormalization strange set in function-pair space (corresponding to periodic points) and have shown that the corresponding parameter values for the generalized Harper equation result in convergence to the strange set under renormalization. We have also extended the theory for irrational $\omega$ having non-periodic continued fractions and in section 5.4 we have given some conjectures based on work of Mestel and Osbaldestin on a the likely structure of the renormalization strange set in this case.

Clearly, there are two directions in which to take this research further. First, our construction for periodic continued fractions is only for periodic codes. The next step would be to consider all codes in the periodic continued fraction case, as was done in [45]. Whilst a non-rigorous theory would be relatively straightforward to formulate, there are considerable technical obstacles to overcome to justify the theory rigorously. These obstacles arise from the
possibility of small divisors as the zeros of the functions $u_{n}$ and $t_{n}$ approach the boundaries of $V_{1}^{n}$ and $V_{0}^{n}$ respectively. Secondly, there are other physical and mathematical problems involving similar renormalization operators of a similar type, and an investigation of their properties, and, perhaps a general theory of these type of renormalization operators might usefully be explored.

We conclude with some brief remarks concerning the physical application of the theory that has been developed in this thesis. Models such as the Harper and generalized Harper equations provide not only valuable insight into the phenomena that occur in real systems, but, perhaps somewhat surprisingly, often capture the actual behaviour of real systems more accurately that might be reasonably expected. This remark is especially relevant to the renormalization theory, since systems within the same universality class will exhibit the same universal behaviour.

Strictly speaking, the results considered in this thesis apply only in the strong-coupling limit $\lambda \rightarrow \infty$. However, it is likely that the theory also succeeds for large and finite $\lambda$. This is known from numerical simulations in the case of golden-mean $\omega$. The restriction to the measure-zero set of quadratic irrationals is also less of a problem, as such numbers frequently organize the wider dynamics. A greater concern, perhaps, is the importance of the symmetry of the cosine potential in the results considered here. A potential having period-1, but without the additional symmetry about the midpoint, would not be in the same universality class as the generalized Harper equation and would converge to a different strange set.

It would certainly be interesting to see whether the results presented here
could be observed in a real-life system. Such an observation would present quite a challenge, not least because the fluctuations in the exponentially decaying wave function would need to be obtained from statistical data from repeated experiments.

## BIBLIOGRAPHY

[1] D. K. Arrowsmith and C. M. Place, An introduction to Dynamical Systems, Cambridge, (1990)
[2] D. K. Arrowsmith and C. M. Place, Dynamical Systems, Chapman \& Hall, (1992)
[3] S. Aubry and G. André, Analyticity breaking and Anderson localization in incommensurate lattices, Ann. Israel Phys. Soc. 3 (1980), 133-164.
[4] T. Bedford, and J. Swift, New Directions in Dynamical Systems, Cambridge University Press (1987).
[5] A. Bondeson, E. Ott, and T. M. Antonsen, Quasiperiodically forced damped pendula and Schrödinger equations with quasiperiodic potentials: implications of their equivalence, Phys. Rev. B 55 (1985), 2103-2106.
[6] Thanks to A. Burbanks for providing this figure.
[7] J. R. Chapman and A. H. Osbaldestin, Self-similar correlations in a barrier billiard, Physica D 180 (2003), 71-91.
[8] F. H. Claro and G. H. Wannier, Magnetic subband structure of electrons in a hexagonal lattice, Phys. Rev. B 19 (1979), 6068-6074.
[9] J. Dalton and B. D. Mestel, Renormalization for the Harper equation for quadratic irrationals, J. Math. Phys. 44 (2003), 4776-4783.
[10] H. Davenport The Higher Arithmetic, Cambridge University Press, (1982).
[11] R. L. Devaney, An Introduction to Chaotic Dynamical Systems. Benjamin/ Cummings, Menlo Park, (1985).
[12] D. Domínguez, C. Wiecko, and J. V. José, Wave-function and resistance scaling for quadratic irrationals in Harper's equation, Phys. Rev. B 45 (1992), 13919-13929.
[13] U. Feudel, A. Pikovsky, and A. Politi, Renormalization of correlations and spectra of a strange non-chaotic attractor, J. Phys. A 29 (1996), 5297-5311.
[14] U. Feudel, A.S. Pikovsky, and M. A. Zaks, Correlation properties of a quasiperiodically forced two-level system, Phys. Rev. E 51 (1995), 17621769.
[15] R. Gilmore, Baker-Campbell-Hausdorff Formulas, J. Math. Phys. 15, 2090-2092, (1974)
[16] J. H. Han, D. J. Thouless, H. Hiramoto, and M. Kohmoto, Critical and bicritical properties of Harper's equation with next-nearest-neighbor coupling, Phys. Rev. B 50 (1994), 11365-11380.
[17] G. H. Hardy, E. M. Wright, An Introduction to The Theory of Numbers, Oxford University Press, (1979).
[18] P. G. Harper, Single band motion of conduction electrons in a uniform magnetic field, Proc. Phys. Soc. London A 68 (1955), 874-892.
[19] Y. Hatsugai and K. Kohmoto, Energy spectrum and the quantum Hall effect on the square lattice with next-nearest-neighbor hopping, Phys. Rev. B 42 (1990), 8282-8294.
[20] M. Hénon A two-dimensional mapping with a strange attractor, Communications in Mathematical Physics 50 (1976), 69-77.
[21] Henon map, retrieved 01/08/2006 from http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Image:HenonMapImage.png
[22] M. R. Herman, Sur la Conjugaisons Differentiable des Diffeomorphismes du Cercle à des rotations, Publ. I.H.E.S. 49 (1979) 5.
[23] D. R. Hofstadter, Energy levels and wave functions of Bloch electrons in rational and irrational magnetic fields, Phys. Rev. B14, (1976), 2239.
[24] Hofstadter Butterfly, retrieved 02/08/2006 from http://physics.technion.ac.il/~odim/hofstadter.html
[25] R. A. Holmgren, A first course in discrete dynamical systems, Springer, (1996)
[26] S. Ya. Jitomirskaya, Metal-insulator transition for the almost Mathieu operator, Ann. Math. 150 (1999), 1159-1175.
[27] T. Kato, Perturbation theory for linear operators, Springer-Verlag 1995.
[28] J. A. Ketoja and I. I. Satija, Renormalization approach to quasiperiodic tight binding models, Phys. Lett. A 194 (1994), 63-70.
[29] J. A. Ketoja and I. I. Satija, Renormalization approach to quasiperiodic quantum spin chains, Physica A 219 (1995), 212-233.
[30] J. A. Ketoja and I. I. Satija, Self-similarity and localization, Phys. Rev. Lett. 75 (1995), 2762-2765.
[31] J. A. Ketoja and I. I. Satija, The re-entrant phase diagram of the generalized Harper equation, J. Phys. C 9 (1997), 1132.
[32] J. A. Ketoja and I. I. Satija, Harper equation, the dissipative standard map and strange nonchaotic attractors: Relationship between an eigenvalue problem and iterated maps, Physica D 109 (1997), 70-80.
[33] D. L. Kreider, R. G. Kuller, D. R. Ostberg, F. W. Perkins, An introduction to linear analysis, Addison-Wesley, (1966).
[34] M. Kohmoto, Metal-insulator transition and scaling for incommensurate systems, Phys. Rev. Lett. 51 (1983), 1198-1201.
[35] M. Kohmoto, L. P. Kadanoff, and C. Tang, Localization problem in onedimension: mapping and escape, Phys. Rev. Lett. 50 (1983), 1870-1872.
[36] S. P. Kuznetsov, A. S. Pikovsky, and U. Feudel, Birth of a strange nonchaotic attractor: A renormalization group analysis, Phys. Rev. E 51 (1995), R1629-R1632.
[37] A. Lesne, Renormalization Methods: Critical Phenomena, Chaos, Fractal Structures, Wiley, (1998)
[38] E. N. Lorenz, Deterministic Nonperiodic Flow, J. Atmos. Sci. 20, 130141, (1963)
[39] Lorenz attractor, retrieved 01/08/2006 from http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Image:Lorenz_attractor_yb.svg
[40] W. D. McComb, Renormalizaton methods, Oxford, (2004)
[41] B. D. Mestel, A computer-assisted proof of universality for cubic critical maps of the circle with golden mean rotation numbers. PhD thesis, Warwick University, (1985)
[42] B. D. Mestel, A. H. Osbaldestin, and B. Winn, Golden mean renormalisation for the Harper equation: the strong coupling fixed point, J. Math. Phys. 41 (2000), 8304-8330.
[43] B. D. Mestel and A. H. Osbaldestin, Periodic orbits of renormalisation for the correlations of strange nonchaotic attractors, Math. Phys. EJ 6 (2000), no. 5, 27 pp .
[44] B. D. Mestel and A. H. Osbaldestin, Renormalization analysis of correlation properties in a quasiperiodically forced two-level system, J. Math. Phys. 43 no. 7 (2002), 3458-3483.
[45] B. D. Mestel and A. H. Osbaldestin, Golden mean renormalization for a generalized Harper equation: The Ketoja-Satija orchid, J. Math. Phys. 45, no. 12 (2004), 5042-5075.
[46] B. D. Mestel and A. H. Osbaldestin, A garden of orchids: a generalised

Harper equation at quadratic irrational frequencies, J. Phys. A: Math. Gen. , 37 (2004), 9071-9086.
[47] B. D. Mestel and A. H. Osbaldestin, Renormalization of correlations in a quasiperiodically forced two-level system: quadratic irrationals, J. Phys. A: Math. Gen. 37 (2004) 8969-8989.
[48] C. D. Olds, Continued Fractions, Random House, (1963).
[49] A. H. Osbaldestin and B. D. Mestel, Renormalization in quasiperiodically forced systems, (in Proceedings of Synchro-2002 - Synchronization of chaotic and stochastic oscillations: applications in physics, chemistry, biology and medicine, Saratov, Russia, Sept. 2002), Fluctuation and Noise Letters, 3, no. 2 (2003) L251-L258.
[50] Thanks to A. H. Osbaldestin for providing this figure.
[51] S. Ostlund, D. A. Rand, J. Sethna, and E. Sigga, Universal properties of the transition from quasi-periodicity to chaos in dissipative systems, Physica D8 (1983) 303-342
[52] S. Ostlund and R. Pandit, Renormalization-group analysis of the discrete quasiperiodic Schrödinger equation, Phys. Rev. B 29 (1984), 1394-1414.
[53] S. Ostlund, R. Pandit, D. Rand, H. J. Schellnhuber, and E. D. Siggia, One-dimensional Schrödinger equation with an almost periodic potential, Phys. Rev. Lett. 50 (1983), 1873-1876.
[54] H. O. Peitgen, H. Jürgens, D. Saupe, Chaos and Fractals: New Frontiers of Science, Springer-Verlag, (1992).
[55] A. M. Rockett, P. Szüsz, Continued fractions, World Scientific, (1992).
[56] H. G. Schuster, Deterministic Chaos, VCH (1988)
[57] S. J. Shenker, Scaling behaviour in a map of the circle onto itself: empirical results, Physica 5D (1982) 405-411
[58] B. Simon, Schrödinger operators in the twentieth century, J. Math. Phys. 41 (2000), 3523-3555.
[59] B. Simon, Schrödinger operators in the twenty-first century. in Mathematical Physics 2000, A. Fokas, A. Grigoryan, T. Kibble, B. Zegarlinski (eds.), Imperial College Press, London, 2000, 283 - 288.
[60] S. Smale, Differentiable dynamical systems, Bull. Amer. Math. Soc. 73 (1967), 747-817.
[61] J. B. Sokoloff, Unusual band structure, wave functions and electrical sonductance in crystals with incommensurate periodic potentials, Physics Reports 126 (1985), 189-244.
[62] H. J. Stöckmann, Quantum Chaos: An introduction, Cambridge University Press (1999)
[63] J. H. Stover, $A$ rate of convergence for a particular estimate of a noise-contaminated chaotic time series, retrieved 19/10/2006, http://cybertiggyr.com/gene/ctfs
[64] C. Tang and M. Kohmoto, Global scaling properties of the spectrum for a quasiperiodic Schrödinger equation, Phys. Rev. B 34 (1986), 2041-2044.
[65] D. J. Thouless, Bandwidths for a quasiperiodic tight-binding model, Phys. Rev. B 28 (1983), 4272-4276.
[66] Weisstein, Eric W. Devil's Staircase, retrieved 15/10/2005 from MathWorld-A Wolfram Web Resource, http://mathworld.wolfram.com/DevilsStaircase.html
[67] Weisstein, Eric W. Lyapunov Characteristic Exponent, retrieved 16/10/2006 from MathWorld-A Wolfram Web Resource, http://mathworld.wolfram.com/LyapunovCharacteristicExponent.html
[68] M. Yampolsky, Hyperbolicity of renormalization of critical circle maps, Publ. Math. Inst. Hautes Etudes Sci. No. 96 (2002), 1-41.

APPENDIX

## A. CONTINUED FRACTIONS AND NUMBER THEORY

## A. 1 Introduction to continued fractions

Continued fractions are a way of expressing any real number, $x \in \mathbb{R}$, as a fraction:

$$
\begin{equation*}
x=a_{0}+\frac{1}{a_{1}+\frac{1}{a_{2}+\frac{1}{a_{3}+\frac{1}{\ddots}}}} \tag{A.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

usually abbreviated by $x=\left[a_{0}, a_{1}, a_{2}, \ldots\right]$, where $a_{0} \in \mathbb{Z}$ and $a_{1}, a_{2}, \ldots \in \mathbb{N}$. The terms $a_{0}, a_{1}, a_{2}, \ldots$ are known as the partial quotients and may be finite or infinite in number corresponding to rational or irrational $x$.

Theorem 13. $x$ is rational if and only if it can be expressed as a finite continued fraction. $x$ is irrational if and only if its continued fraction expansion is infinite [55].

## A. 2 Convergents

The continued fraction expansion $x_{0}=\left[a_{1}, a_{2}, a_{3}, \ldots\right]$ of a real number has partial quotients $a_{n}$ and partial remainders $x_{n}$ calculated by the recursion

$$
\begin{equation*}
x_{n}=a_{n}+\frac{1}{x_{n+1}} \tag{A.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $a_{n}=\left\lfloor x_{n}\right\rfloor$ is the largest integer less than $x_{n}$. The process stops if some $x_{n}=a_{n}$ as occurs when $x$ is rational. The convergents $c_{n}=p_{n} / q_{n}=$ $\left[a_{1}, a_{2}, \ldots, a_{n}\right]$ are given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
p_{n+1}=a_{n} p_{n}+p_{n-1} \quad \text { and } \quad q_{n+1}=a_{n} q_{n}+q_{n-1}, \tag{A.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

with $p_{-1}=1, p_{0}=a_{0}, q_{-1}=0$, and $q_{0}=1$.
They are exactly the set of best rational approximations to $x$, i.e. $p / q$ is a convergent to $x$ if and only if

$$
\begin{equation*}
0 \leq|q x-p|<\left|q^{\prime} x-p^{\prime}\right| \tag{A.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

holds for all integers $p, q, p^{\prime}, q^{\prime}$ with $0<q^{\prime}<q$. The partial remainders $x_{n}$ satisfy

$$
\begin{equation*}
x_{n+1}=\gamma\left(x_{n}\right) \tag{A.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\gamma:(0,1) \mapsto(0,1)$ is the Gauss map given by

$$
\gamma(x)=\left\{\begin{array}{cl}
0 & \text { if } x=0  \tag{A.6}\\
\{1 / x\} & \text { otherwise }
\end{array}\right.
$$

where $\}$ denotes the fractional part.

Theorem 14. Any two consecutive convergents satisfy the relation

$$
\begin{equation*}
p_{i} q_{i-1}-q_{i} p_{i-1}=(-1)^{i}, \tag{A.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $p_{i}$ and $q_{i}$ are defined by the recurrence relations in (A.3).

For example, if we take $i=2$ then we know from above that $p_{1}=a_{1}, q_{1}=$ 1, $p_{2}=a_{2} a_{1}+1$, and $q_{2}=a_{2}$, so

$$
\begin{equation*}
p_{2} q_{1}-q_{2} p_{1}=\left(a_{2} a_{1}+1\right)-a_{2} a_{1}=1=(-1)^{2} . \tag{A.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

Theorem 15. The convergents, $c_{k}, k<n$, of the continued fraction $x=$ $\left[a_{1}, a_{2}, \ldots\right]$ are alternately less than and greater than $x$.

Proof. Writing (A.7) in the form

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{p_{i}}{q_{i}}-\frac{p_{i-1}}{q_{i-1}}=\frac{(-1)^{i}}{q_{i-1} q_{i}}, \tag{A.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

we see that the right hand side is positive if $i$ is even and negative if $i$ is odd. Since the value of $q_{1}, q_{2}, q_{3}, \ldots$ increases, the difference in (A.9) decreases as $i$ increases. Thus, $p_{2} / q_{2}$ is greater than $p_{1} / q_{1}$, and $p_{3} / q_{3}$ is less than $p_{2} / q_{2}$
but greater than $p_{1} / q_{1}$, etc. Since $p_{n} / q_{n} \rightarrow x$ as $n \rightarrow \infty$ it follows that all the even convergents are greater than $x$ and all the odd convergents are less than $x$.

## A. 3 Quadratic irrationals

The continued fraction, $x=\left[a_{1}, a_{2}, \ldots\right]$, is said to be eventually periodic if there exists positive integers $N$ and $k$ such that for all $n \geq N, a_{n}=a_{n+k}$. This can be written

$$
\begin{equation*}
x=\left[a_{1}, a_{2}, \ldots, a_{N}, a_{N+1}, \ldots, a_{N+k-1}, a_{N}, a_{N+1}, \ldots\right] \tag{A.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

or abbreviated by

$$
\begin{equation*}
x=\left[a_{1}, a_{2}, \ldots, \overline{a_{N}, a_{N+1}, \ldots, a_{N+k-1}}\right] \tag{A.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

Theorem 16. (Euler) An irrational solution of a quadratic equation with integer coefficients has an eventually periodic continued fraction.

Conversely,

Theorem 17. (Lagrange) Any $x$ with eventually periodic continued fraction expansion satisfies a quadratic equation with integer coefficients.

Example 1. The simplest example of this is the continued fraction for the (positive) root of the quadratic equation $x^{2}-x-1=0$. Rearranging this gives $x=1+\frac{1}{x}$, repeatedly replacing the $x$ on the right-hand-side by its equal
gives the continued fraction

$$
\begin{equation*}
x=1+\frac{1}{1+\frac{1}{1+\frac{1}{\ddots}}} \tag{A.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

## A.3.1 Reverse periodic continued fractions

Theorem 18. (Galois) If a quadratic irrational $x_{1}$ has the continued fraction expansion $x_{1}=\left[\overline{a_{1}, \ldots, a_{k}}\right]$ then

$$
\begin{equation*}
-\frac{1}{\bar{x}_{1}}=\left[\overline{a_{k}, \ldots, a_{1}}\right] \tag{A.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\bar{x}_{1}$ is the quadratic conjugate to $x_{1}$, i.e. the other root of the quadratic equation satisfied by $x_{1}$.

## A. 4 Euclidean algorithm

The Euclidean algorithm is a method for finding the continued fraction expansion, $\left[a_{1}, a_{2}, a_{3} \ldots\right]$, of a number $x$. Initially $a_{1}$ is set equal to $\lfloor x\rfloor$, the integer part of $x$, this may be positive, negative, or zero, and $x_{1}$ is set equal to $\{x\}$, the fractional part of $x$. Thus,

$$
\begin{align*}
x & =\frac{1}{a_{1}+\frac{1}{a_{2}+\frac{1}{a_{3}+\ddots}}}  \tag{A.14}\\
& =\frac{1}{a_{1}+x_{1}}, \tag{A.15}
\end{align*}
$$

so that $x_{1}=\left[a_{2}, a_{3}, a_{4}, \ldots\right]$. In the next step $a_{2}$ is set equal to $\left\lfloor x_{1}^{-1}\right\rfloor$, the integer part of the reciprocal of $x_{1}$, and $x_{2}$ equal to the fractional part, $\left\{x_{1}^{-1}\right\}$. This process is repeated so that

$$
\begin{equation*}
a_{i+1}=\left\lfloor x_{i}^{-1}\right\rfloor \quad \text { and } \quad x_{i+1}=\left\{x_{i}^{-1}\right\}, \quad i=0,1,2, \ldots . \tag{A.16}
\end{equation*}
$$

Note that $a_{k}$ is positive for $k=1,2, \ldots$, and that since $x_{k}$ is the fractional part, each $x_{k}$ is in the interval $(0,1)$. This process gives a unique continued fraction for each real number $x$, and the process terminates if and only if $x$ is rational.

This algorithm is related to the Euclidean algorithm for finding the greatest common divisor of two integers $m$ and $n$ [48]. If this method is used to find the continued fraction of $m / n$, then the quotients from the Euclidean algorithm are the integers, $a_{0}, a_{1}, a_{2}, \ldots$, that make up the continued fraction, and the last nonzero remainder from the Euclidean algorithm is the greatest common divisor of $m$ and $n$.

As an illustration we calculate the first entries of the continued fraction for $\pi$,
for which there is no known general formula. We have, $x_{0}=\pi=3.14159 \ldots$,

$$
\begin{array}{lll}
x_{0}^{-1}=0.31830 \ldots & a_{1}=0 & x_{1}=0.31830 \ldots \\
x_{1}^{-1}=3.14159 \ldots & a_{2}=3 & x_{2}=0.14159 \ldots \\
x_{2}^{-1}=7.06251 \ldots & a_{3}=7 & x_{3}=0.06251 \ldots \\
x_{3}^{-1}=15.99659 \ldots & a_{4}=15 & x_{4}=0.99659 \ldots \\
x_{4}^{-1}=1.00341 \ldots & a_{5}=1 & x_{5}=0.00341 \ldots \\
x_{5}^{-1}=292.63459 \ldots & a_{6}=292 & x_{6}=0.63459 \ldots \tag{A.22}
\end{array}
$$

so the first entries of the continued fraction for $\pi$ are given by $\pi=[0 ; 3,7,15,1,292, \ldots]$.

## A. 5 The Gauss map

The Gauss map $\gamma:(0,1) \rightarrow(0,1)$, defined in equation (A.6), is an example of a chaotic discrete dynamical system. In terms of the Gauss map $\gamma$, the above algorithm (A.16) becomes

$$
\begin{align*}
& x_{i+1}=\left\{x_{i}^{-1}\right\}=\gamma\left(x_{i}\right)  \tag{A.23}\\
& a_{i+1}=\left\lfloor x_{i}^{-1}\right\rfloor, \quad i=0,1,2, \ldots . \tag{A.24}
\end{align*}
$$

Thus the continued fraction $x_{k}=\left[x_{k+1}, x_{k+2}, x_{k+3}, \ldots\right]$ is generated as a byproduct of the iteration of the Gauss map.

Taking the continued fraction, $x_{0}=\left[a_{1}, a_{2}, a_{3}, \ldots\right]$, we see that $\gamma\left(x_{0}\right)=x_{1}=$ $\left[a_{2}, a_{3}, a_{4}, \ldots\right], \gamma\left(x_{1}\right)=x_{2}=\left[a_{3}, a_{4}, a_{5}, \ldots\right], \gamma\left(x_{2}\right)=x_{3}=\left[a_{4}, a_{5}, a_{6}, \ldots\right]$, and
so on. This relates the Gauss map to the shift map discussed in appendix C.

## B. DYNAMICAL SYSTEMS

## B. 1 Continuous dynamical systems

A continuous dynamical system is a set of first order differential equations

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d x}{d t}=F(x, t), \quad x \in X \tag{B.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

the system is said to be autonomous if it does not vary with time, i.e. $F_{n}=$ $F_{n}(x)$.

The set of curves given by the solutions $x_{n}(t) n=1,2, \ldots$ are known as trajectories or orbit.

## B. 2 Discrete dynamical systems

A discrete dynamical system is described by a function $f: X \rightarrow X$ and its iterates. The dynamics of the system is given by the behaviour of the points $x \in X$ under iteration, i.e. the properties of the sequence $x, f(x), f^{2}(x)=$ $f(f(x)), f^{3}(x)=f(f(f(x))) \ldots$ and the limit $\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty}\left|f^{n}(x)\right|$.

## B. 3 Invariant sets

If the orbit of a point $x_{t}$ remains within a particular region of phase space for all $t \in \mathbb{R}$ then it constitutes an invariant set. The following definition is given in [1].

Definition. $A$ set $\Lambda \subseteq M$ is said to be invariant under $f$ if $f^{m}(x) \in \Lambda$ for each $x \in \Lambda$ and all $m \in M$.

## B.3.1 Fixed points

A fixed point of a function $f$ is one which remains under iteration of f .

Definition. If $f$ is a function and $f(c)=c$ then $c$ is a fixed point of $f$.

## B.3.2 Periodic points

Definition. If $f$ is a function and $f^{k}(x)=x$, and $f^{n}(x) \neq x$ for $0<n<k$, then $x$ is a periodic point of $f$ with period $k$.

Definition. If $x$ is a periodic point of $f$ with period $k$ then the iterates $x, f(x), f^{2}(x), \ldots, f^{k-1}(x)$ are called a periodic orbit.

Definition. The point $x$ is an eventually periodic point of $f$ with period $k$ if there exists $N$ such that $f^{n+k}(x)=f^{n}(x)$ whenever $n \geq N$.

Example 2. Let $f(x)=|x-1|$ then $f$ has a periodic orbit $\{0,1\}$ since $f(0)=1$ and $f^{2}(0)=f(1)=0$. For any integer starting value, this map is eventually periodic ending in the periodic orbit $\{0,1\}$.

Fixed points and periodic orbits are examples of invariant sets which are periodic. A more complex example of an invariant set is Smale's horseshoe [60]

## B.3.3 Horseshoe map

Smale's horseshoe is a diffeomorphism of the plane $h: S \rightarrow S$ where $S$ is a square capped by two semi discs (figure B.1). The action of the map is to contract the square vertically and elongate it horizontally to make a thin strip which is then bent into a horseshoe shape and placed back onto $S$ (figure B.2). The curved part of the horseshoe overlaps the square, and under iteration the points in this region have orbits which are attracted to a fixed point outside the square. Most orbits leave the square under iteration, the points which remain form a fractal invariant set.


Fig. B.1: Original square $S_{0}$ capped by two semi discs.

Concentrating on the square, under forward iteration the original square is mapped to two horizontal strips as in figure B.3. Let $H_{n}=h^{n}\left(S_{0}\right) \cap S_{0}$ be the two horizontal strips created at time $n$ where $S_{0}$ is the original square. Under backward iteration it is revealed that these strips $H_{n}$ come from vertical strips $V_{n}$ of the original square where $V_{n}=h^{-n}\left(H_{n}\right)$. For a point to remain in the


Fig. B.2: Smale's horseshoe.
square indefinitely it must belong to a set $\Lambda$ which maps to itself. The squares where the horizontal and vertical stripes intersect $H_{n} \cap V_{n}$ converge to this invariant set,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty}\left(H_{n} \cap V_{n}\right)=\Lambda . \tag{B.2}
\end{equation*}
$$



Fig. B.3: Illustration of $H_{1} \cap V_{1}$.

## B.3.4 Solenoid attractor

Another example of an invariant set is the solenoid attractor. Consider the map on the solid torus given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
F_{\beta}(\theta, x)=\left(2 \theta, \beta x+\frac{1}{2} e^{i \theta}\right) \tag{B.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

The map describes a torus which is cut to get long cylinder. The cylinder is stretched to twice its length while contracting its width by $\beta$. The resulting long, thin cylinder is wrapped around itself twice, the ends are rejoined and it is replaced inside the original space.

Iterating the solenoid map $n$ times results in a very long, thin tube that winds around the inside of the torus $2^{n}$ times (as shown in figure B.4). Notice $F^{n}(T)$ is a closed set contained completely inside the interior of $F^{n-1}(T)$. Thus $\cap_{n \geq 0} F^{n}(T)=\Lambda$. It can be shown that $F$ is a homeomorphism on $\Lambda$. Since $\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty} F^{n}(x) \in \Lambda$ for any $x \in T, \Lambda$ is the attractor for $F$ [63].

## B. 4 Chaos and strange attractors

A dynamical system is said to be chaotic if it has the following properties [11]:

1. it displays sensitive dependence on initial conditions,
2. it is transitive
3. its periodic orbits are dense.


Fig. B.4: Smale's solenoid map [63].

## B.4.1 Sensitivity to initial conditions

A map $f$ displays sensitive dependence on initial conditions if points arbitrarily close become separated under iteration.

Definition. Let $X$ be the phase space for the map $f$, then $f$ displays sensitive dependence to initial conditions if there is a $\delta>0$ such that for every point $x \in X$ and any neighborhood $N$ containing $x$ there exist a point $y$ from that neighborhood $N$ and a time $\tau$ such that the distance

$$
\begin{equation*}
d\left(f^{\tau}(x), f^{\tau}(y)\right)>\delta \tag{B.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

This means that for each $x$ there are points arbitrarily close to $x$ whose orbits
eventually move far away from the orbit of $x$.

## B.4.2 Transitive orbits

Definition. A dynamical system is transitive if for any pair of points $x, y$ and any neighbourhood $U \ni x$ and $V \ni y$, there exists a third point $z \in U$ with an orbit $f^{n}(z) \in V$ for some $n \geq 0$.

If a dynamical system has a dense orbit then it is transitive since this orbit comes arbitrarily close to all points. There is also the following theorem given in [1]

Theorem 19. A dynamical system is transitive if and only if it has a dense orbit.

## B.4.3 Density of periodic orbits

For a map $f: X \rightarrow X$ an orbit is said to be dense if the set $\left\{f^{n}(x): n=\right.$ $1,2, \ldots\}$ is dense in $X$.

Definition. Let $A$ be a subset of space $X . A$ is said to be dense in $X$ if for any point $x \in X$, any neighborhood of $x$ contains at least one point from $A$. If $X$ is a metric space then $A$ is dense in $X$ if every $x \in X$ is a limit of $a$ sequence of elements in $A$.

## B.4.4 Strange attractors

The four main properties of a strange attractor according to [54] are:

- There is a trapping region within which all initial points have orbits leading to the attractor,
- the orbits display sensitive dependence on initial conditions,
- it contains a dense orbit, its periodic orbits are dense,
- the attractor has a fractal structure.

A trapping region, $R$, is a region of phase space from which no orbit can escape, each orbit started in $R$ remains in $R$ for all iterations. The basin of attraction is the set of all points that have orbits that are eventually caught by this trapping region.

Strange attractors occur in both continuous dynamical systems such as the Lorenz system [38] (see figure B.5) and in discrete systems such as the Hénon map [20] (see figure B.6).

## B. 5 Lyapunov exponents

The Lyapunov exponent is used to study the stability of dynamical systems. It gives the rate of exponential divergence from a perturbed initial condition. The larger the Lyapunov exponent, the greater the rate of exponential divergence.

There is whole spectrum of Lyapunov exponents, the number of them is equal to the number of dimensions of the phase space. For an $n$-dimensional system there are $n$ Lyapunov exponents $\sigma_{1} \geq \sigma_{2} \geq \ldots \geq \sigma_{n}$ dominated by the largest one which determines the stability of the system.


Fig. B.5: Lorenz attractor [39].

Consider the orbit around a point $x^{*}(t)$ with average perturbation $u(t)$ at time $t$ and let $x(t)=x^{*}(t)+u(t)$ then for an $n$-dimensional mapping the Lypanunov exponent is given by [67]

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sigma_{i}=\lim _{N \rightarrow \infty} \ln \left|\lambda_{i}(N)\right|, \tag{B.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

for $i=1, \ldots, n$, where $\lambda_{i}=\varepsilon^{\sigma_{i}}$ is the Lyapunov number. For an $n$ dimensional linear map, $x_{n+1}=M x_{n}$, the Lyapunov numbers $\lambda_{1}, \ldots, \lambda_{n}$ are given by the eigenvalues of $M$.


Fig. B.6: Hénon attractor [21].

## C. SHIFT SPACES

Shift spaces are used to model dynamical systems, in particular they are the objects of study in symbolic dynamics.

## C. 1 The shift operator

The shift operator $\sigma$ maps a sequence $\left(\ldots, s_{n}, s_{n+1}, s_{n+2}, \ldots\right)$ to another sequence, $\left(\ldots, s_{n+1}, s_{n+2}, s_{n+3}, \ldots\right)$, by shifting all symbols to the left, i.e. $\sigma\left(s_{n}\right)=s_{n+1}$. If the sequence is infinite in one direction, it is called a onesided shift and its action is to cut off the first symbol so that $\sigma\left(s_{0}, s_{1}, \ldots\right)=$ $\left(0, s_{1}, s_{2}, \ldots\right)$. If $\sigma$ acts on a bi-infinite sequence, it is called a two-sided shift and $\sigma\left(\ldots, s_{-1}, s_{0}, s_{1}, \ldots\right)=\left(\ldots, s_{0}, s_{1}, s_{2}, \ldots\right)$. Only the two-sided shift is invertible.

## C. 2 Full shifts

Let $\mathcal{A}=\{0,1, \ldots, N-1\}$ denote an ordered set of symbols. The phase space $\Sigma_{N}$ of this system is the space of all biinfinite sequences of elements from the
set of $N$ symbols given by:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Sigma_{N}=\left\{s=\left(s_{n}\right)_{n \in \mathbb{Z}} \mid s_{n} \in \mathcal{A}\right\} . \tag{C.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

The full $N$-shift is given by the pair $\left(\Sigma_{N}, \sigma\right)$ where $\sigma: \Sigma_{N} \mapsto \Sigma_{N}$ is the shift transformation defined above.

The distance between two distinct sequences $s$ and $t$ is given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
d(s, t)=\frac{1}{|n|+1} \tag{C.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $n$ is the coordinate of smallest absolute value where they differ. Thus if $d(s, t)<1 / n$ for $n>0$, then $s_{k}=t_{k}$ for $-n<k<n$.

## C. 3 Subshifts

Restricting the shift transformation of a full shift $\Sigma_{N}$ to a closed shiftinvariant subspace $\Sigma$, gives the subshift $(\Sigma, \sigma)$. A subshift can be any subspace of the full shift that is invariant under the action of the shift operator.

An example of a subshift is the one-sided version of the full $N$-shift,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Sigma_{N}^{+}=\left\{s=\left(s_{0}, s_{1}, \ldots\right) \mid s_{n} \in \mathcal{A}, n=0,1,2, \ldots\right\} \tag{2.3.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

On this space the shift transformation $\sigma$ is similarly defined by $\sigma\left(s_{n}\right)=s_{n+1}$ but now only for non-negative $n$.

Some subshifts can be characterized by a transition matrix which determines
the allowed sequences, these are called subshifts of finite type, or topological Markov shifts.

## C.3.1 Topological Markov shifts

Let $\mathcal{A}=\{0,1, \ldots, N-1\}$ be a finite set of symbols and let $M$ be an $N \times N$ matrix with entries in $\{0,1\}$ which determines the allowed transitions. If $\sigma$ is the shift operator acting on the set $X$ of all allowed sequences then the subshift of finite type is defined to be the pair $(X, \sigma)$.

For a one-side sequence the shift space is given by:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Sigma_{M}^{+}=\left\{\left(s_{0}, s_{1}, \ldots\right) \mid s_{n} \in A, M_{s_{n} s_{n+1}}=1, n \in \mathbb{N}\right\} \tag{C.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

This is the space of all allowed sequences, it says that the symbol $p$ can be followed by the symbol $q$ if and only if the $(p, q)^{t h}$ entry of the matrix $M$ is 1.

Similarly, for a two-sided shift of finite type the shift space is given by:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Sigma_{M}=\left\{\left(\ldots, s_{-1}, s_{0}, s_{1}, \ldots\right) \mid s_{n} \in A, M_{s_{n} s_{n+1}}=1, n \in \mathbb{Z}\right\} . \tag{C.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

Example 3. The Fibonacci shift, so-called because the number of allowed blocks of length $n$ are the Fibonacci numbers, has two 1-blocks, three 2-blocks, five 3-blocks,....

Here the alphabet $A=\{0,1\}$ consists of 0 's and 1 's. The space $\Sigma_{M}$ is given
by (C.4) where the allowed transitions are determined by the matrix

$$
M=\left(\begin{array}{ll}
1 & 1  \tag{C.5}\\
1 & 0
\end{array}\right)
$$

This says that only sequences of 0's and 1's with 1's separated by 0's are allowed.

## C. 4 Symbolic dynamics

Symbolic dynamics provides a way of obtaining a deeper insight into the nature of chaotic orbits. The dynamics are coded in terms of sequences of symbols. The basic idea is to divide up the set of possible states into a finite number of intervals, and keep track of which interval the state of the system lies in at each time step. Each interval is associated with a symbol, and in this way the evolution of the system is described by an infinite sequence of symbols called a symbolic trajectory that reflects the properties of the original dynamical trajectory.

## D. SPECTRAL THEORY OF COMPACT LINEAR OPERATORS ON BANACH SPACES

In this section we give a brief synopsis of the Banach space theory that we use in the thesis. Further details may be found in [27], on which this appendix is based.

## D. 1 Banach spaces

Definition. Normed vector space. For a real or complex vector space $X$, a norm is any function $\|x\|$, defined for all $x \in X$, which satisfies the following conditions:

- $\|x\| \geq 0,\|x\|=0$ if and only if $x=0$,
- $\|\alpha x\|=|\alpha|\|x\|$ (homogeneity), $\alpha$ scalar.
- $\|x+y\| \leq\|x\|+\|y\|$ (triangle inequality).

A norm gives rise to a topology on the vector space $X$ as follows, in a normed vector space $X$ the convergence $x_{k} \rightarrow x$ is defined by $\left\|x_{k}-x\right\| \rightarrow 0$ this implies the Cauchy condition $\left\|x_{n}-x_{m}\right\| \rightarrow 0$ is satisfied and $\left\{x_{k}\right\}$ is a Cauchy sequence.

Definition. Cauchy convergence. A sequence $\left\{x_{k}\right\}$ is said to be a Cauchy sequence if for each $\epsilon>0$ there exists an integer $K$, depending on $\epsilon$, such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left|x_{m}-x_{n}\right|<\epsilon \tag{D.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

for all $m, n \geq K$ [33].

If $X$ is a finite dimensional vector space then the Cauchy condition is sufficient for the existence of a limit $x \in X$. For an infinite dimensional space $X$ a Cauchy sequence need not have a limit in $X$. Those spaces $X$ for which every Cauchy sequence has a limit in $X$ are called complete.

Definition. A normed vector space $X$ is said to be complete if every Cauchy sequence contained in $X$ has a limit $x \in X$. A complete normed vector space is called a Banach space.

## D.1.1 $L^{p}$ Spaces

We now give some important examples of Banach spaces which we use in the thesis.

Let $\tilde{X}$ be a Banach space with norm $\|$.$\| and let X$ be a space of sequences, finite, infinite, or biinfinite, of elements of $\tilde{X}$. For a vector $x \in X, x=x_{j}$, $x_{j} \in \tilde{X}$, the $p$-norm is defined for $p \geq 1$ to be

$$
\begin{equation*}
\|x\|_{p}=\left(\sum_{j}\left|x_{j}\right|^{p}\right)^{1 / p} \tag{D.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

The space $L^{p}$ is defined to be the set of all infinite sequences such that the $p$-norm is finite i.e. the series $\left\{\left|x_{j}\right|^{p}\right\}$ converges.

The $p$-norm is defined on the $L^{p}$ space for $1 \leq p \leq \infty$, where the $\infty$-norm is given by $\|x\|_{\infty}=\sup \left|x_{j}\right|$ and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\|x\|_{\infty}=\lim _{p \rightarrow \infty}\|x\|_{p} . \tag{D.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

The $L^{p}$ spaces are examples of Banach spaces.

Especially relevant to this thesis is the case $p=1$. An example of this are the analytical function spaces defined on discs in $\mathbb{C}$ that we use in equation (3.73).

## D. 2 Bounded linear operators

A bounded linear operator is a linear transformation $L$ between Banach spaces $X$ and $Y$ for which the ratio of the norm of $L(x)$ to that of $x$ is bounded by the same number, over all non-zero vectors $x \in X$. In other words, there exists some $M>0$ such that for all $x \in X$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\|L(x)\|_{Y} \leq M\|x\|_{X} . \tag{D.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

The smallest such $M$ is called the operator norm of $L$.
On a Banach space a linear operator is bounded if and only if it is continuous.

## D. 3 Compact operators

A special class of linear operator is the compact operator.

Definition. A compact operator is a linear operator $L$ from a Banach space $X$ to another Banach space $Y$, such that the image under $L$ of any bounded subset of $X$ is a relatively compact subset of $Y$. Such an operator is necessarily a bounded operator, and so continuous.

Definition. $A$ subset $S \subset X$ is said to be compact if any sequence of elements of $S$ has a subsequence converging to an element of $S$ [27].

Let $T$ and $A$ be operators with the same domain space $X$. Assume that $D(T) \subset D(A)$ and, for any sequence $u_{n} \in D(T)$ with both $u_{n}$ and $T u_{n}$ bounded, $A u_{n}$ contains a convergent subsequence. Then $A$ is said to be relatively compact with respect to $T$.

## D. 4 Spectral values

Let $X$ be a Banach space, then the set of all bounded linear operators on $X$ forms a Banach algebra, $B(X)$. Let $T \in B(X)$ be a bounded linear operator, then the spectrum of $T$, denoted by $\sigma(T)$, consists of those $\lambda$ for which $\lambda I-T$ is not invertible in $B(X)$.

If $T$ is a compact operator, then it can be shown that any nonzero $\lambda$ in the spectrum is an eigenvalue. Therefore $\sigma(T)$ is bounded and consists of discrete eigenvalues plus possibly 0 .

Theorem 20. Let $T \in B(X)$ be compact. $\sigma(T)$ is a countable set with no accumulation point different from zero. Each nonzero $\lambda \in \sigma(T)$ is an eigenvalue of $T$ with finite multiplicity.

## D.4.1 Properties of the spectrum

Definition. An operator is said to have discrete spectrum if it has a finite set or a countable set of eigenvalues. An operator with non-discrete eigenvalues has a continuous spectrum.

The spectrum $\sigma(T)$ of an operator $T$ consists of those $\lambda$ for which $(T-\lambda I)^{-1}$ does not exist.
$\sigma(T)$ has the following properties:

- $\sigma(T)$ is always compact and non-empty.
- $\sigma(T)$ is bounded and closed, $\sigma(T) \leq B(0,\|T\|)$.
- For $\lambda \in \sigma(T), \lambda$ is an eigenvalue if there exists a vector $\mathbf{x} \neq 0$ such that $T \mathbf{x}=\lambda \mathbf{x}$, however, not all spectral values are eigenvalues.

Example 4. Let $\mathbf{v}=\sum_{i=0}^{\infty} f_{i} x^{i}=f(x)$, $T f(x)=2 f(x / 2)$, then $\mathbf{v}_{n}=x^{n}$ is an eigenvalue with eigenvector $\lambda_{n}=2^{-(n+1)} \rightarrow 0$ as $n \rightarrow \infty$. Therefore $\lambda=0$ is an example of a spectral value that is not an eigenvalue.

## E. PROOF OF LEMMA 2

Here we give the proof of Lemma 2.

Proof. We have that $R_{0, n}^{p}$ is analyticity improving on the domains $V_{1}^{n} \times V_{0}^{n}$. It is then a standard result that such operators are compact. Indeed the arguments in, for example, [42] may be readily adapted to the case considered here. Let us now give an outline of the calculation of the spectrum. The arguments given here are also analogous to those found in $[42,9]$.

Recall that

$$
\begin{equation*}
R_{0, n}(U(x), T(x))=\left(T\left(\theta_{0}^{n}(x)\right), \sum_{i=0}^{a_{n}-1} T\left(\theta_{i}^{n}(x)\right)+U\left(\theta_{a_{n}}^{n}(x)\right)\right), \tag{E.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

and $R_{0, n}^{\ell}=R_{0, n+\ell-1} R_{0, n+\ell-2} \ldots R_{0, n}$.

We may obtain the spectrum directly by noting that the eigenfunction pairs consist of polynomials. The arguments of [42] may be readily adapted in this case. Letting $U(x)=U_{m} x^{m}+U_{m-1} x^{m-1}+\ldots+U_{0}$ and $T(x)=T_{m} x^{m}+$ $T_{m-1} x^{m-1}+\ldots+T_{0}$ for $m \geq 0$ then

$$
\begin{equation*}
R_{0, n}(U, T)=\binom{T_{m}\left(-\omega_{n} x\right)^{m}+T_{m-1}\left(-\omega_{n} x\right)^{m-1}+\ldots+T_{0}}{\left(\sum_{i=0}^{a_{n}-1} T_{m}\left(-\omega_{n} x-i\right)^{m}+\ldots+T_{0}\right)+U_{m}\left(-\omega_{n} x-a_{n}\right)^{m}+\ldots+U_{0}} \tag{E.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

Considering the coefficients of the $x^{m}$-terms we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
R_{0, n}\binom{U_{m}}{T_{m}}=M_{n}\binom{U_{m}}{T_{m}} \tag{E.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

where

$$
M_{n}=\left(-\omega_{n}\right)^{m}\left(\begin{array}{cc}
0 & 1  \tag{E.4}\\
1 & a_{n}
\end{array}\right)
$$

so that

$$
\begin{equation*}
R_{0, n}^{p}\binom{U_{m}}{T_{m}}=M_{n+p-1}\binom{U_{m}}{T_{m}} \tag{E.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

where
$M_{n+p-1}=(-1)^{p m}\left(\omega_{0} \omega_{1} \ldots \omega_{p-1}\right)^{m}\left(\begin{array}{cc}0 & 1 \\ 1 & a_{n+p-1}\end{array}\right)\left(\begin{array}{cc}0 & 1 \\ 1 & a_{n+p-2}\end{array}\right) \cdots\left(\begin{array}{cc}0 & 1 \\ 1 & a_{n}\end{array}\right)$.

Now for $k \in \mathbb{Z}$,

$$
\left(\begin{array}{cc}
0 & 1  \tag{E.7}\\
1 & a_{k}
\end{array}\right)\binom{1}{-\omega_{k-1}}=-\omega_{k-1}\binom{1}{-\omega_{k}}
$$

so we see that

$$
\left(\begin{array}{cc}
0 & 1  \tag{E.8}\\
1 & a_{n+p-1}
\end{array}\right) \ldots\left(\begin{array}{cc}
0 & 1 \\
1 & a_{n}
\end{array}\right)\binom{1}{-\omega_{n-1}}=(-1)^{p} \omega_{0} \ldots \omega_{p-1}\binom{1}{-\omega_{n+p-1}}
$$

gives the eigenvalue $(-1)^{p} \gamma_{0}^{p}$. Similarly,

$$
\left(\begin{array}{cc}
0 & 1  \tag{E.9}\\
1 & a_{n}
\end{array}\right) \cdots\left(\begin{array}{cc}
0 & 1 \\
1 & a_{n+p-1}
\end{array}\right)\binom{\omega_{n+p-1}}{1}=\omega_{0}^{-1} \ldots \omega_{p-1}^{-1}\binom{\omega_{n}}{1}
$$

gives the second eigenvalue $\left(\gamma_{0}^{p}\right)^{-1}$ since, for all $j$,

$$
\left(\begin{array}{cc}
0 & 1  \tag{E.10}\\
1 & a_{j}
\end{array}\right)^{t}=\left(\begin{array}{cc}
0 & 1 \\
1 & a_{j}
\end{array}\right)
$$

Thus (E.9) also gives the eigenvalues for the product

$$
\left(\begin{array}{cc}
0 & 1  \tag{E.11}\\
1 & a_{n+p-1}
\end{array}\right) \cdots\left(\begin{array}{cc}
0 & 1 \\
1 & a_{n}
\end{array}\right)
$$

Now from (E.6) we see the eigenvalues of $R_{0, n}^{p}$ are given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\{(-1)^{p(m+1)}\left(\gamma_{0}^{p}\right)^{m+1},(-1)^{p m}\left(\gamma_{0}^{p}\right)^{m-1}, m=0,1,2, \ldots\right\} \tag{E.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

Setting $m=0$ gives the two eigenvalues of $R_{0, n}^{p}$ outside of the unit disc in $\mathbb{C}$.

## F. CONSTRUCTION OF THE PROJECTION OPERATOR

In this appendix we prove the existence of the projection $P_{0, n}$ given in section 4.1.2 by constructing $\mathbf{v}_{0}^{n}$ and $\mathbf{v}_{1}^{n}$ explicitly so that they satisfy equations (4.6) and (4.7).

Let $\mathbf{v}_{0}^{n}=\left(A_{n}, C_{n}\right)$, so that,

$$
\begin{align*}
R_{0, n-1}\left(\mathbf{v}_{0}^{n}\right) & =\left(C_{n-1}, a_{n-1} C_{n-1}+A_{n-1}\right)  \tag{F.1}\\
& =\omega_{n-1}^{-1}\left(A_{n}, C_{n}\right) \tag{F.2}
\end{align*}
$$

which implies that

$$
\begin{equation*}
A_{n}=\omega_{n-1} C_{n-1}, \tag{F.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{equation*}
a_{n-1} C_{n-1}+A_{n-1}=\omega_{n-1}^{-1} C_{n} . \tag{F.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

Now, the condition (4.8) together with (F.3-F.4) gives the recursion:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\omega_{n-1}^{-1} C_{n}+\omega_{n-1} C_{n-1}=1 \tag{F.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

Similarly, we let $V_{1}^{n}=\left(A_{n} x+B_{n}, C_{n} x+D_{n}\right)$, then

$$
\begin{align*}
& R_{0, n-1}\left(\mathbf{v}_{1}^{n}\right)=\left(\begin{array}{c}
C_{n-1}\left(-\omega_{n-1} x\right)+D_{n-1} \\
\sum_{j=0}^{a_{n-1}-1} C_{n-1}\left(-\omega_{n-1} x-j\right)+D_{n-1} \\
+A_{n-1}\left(-\omega_{n-1} x-a_{n-1}\right)+B_{n-1}
\end{array}\right) \\
&=-\left(A_{n} x+B_{n}, C_{n} x+D_{n}\right) \tag{F.6}
\end{align*}
$$

implies that

$$
\begin{equation*}
B_{n}=-D_{n-1}, \tag{F.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{align*}
D_{n} & =\frac{1}{2}\left(a_{n-1}-1\right) a_{n-1} C_{n-1}+a_{n-1} A_{n-1}-a_{n-1} D_{n-1}+D_{n-2}  \tag{F.8}\\
& =\Lambda_{n-1}-a_{n-1} D_{n-1}+D_{n-2} \tag{F.9}
\end{align*}
$$

where $\Lambda_{n}=\frac{1}{2}\left(a_{n}-1\right) a_{n} C_{n}+a_{n} A_{n}$.

## F. 1 Period 1

If $\omega$ is a period 1 continued fraction then $a$ is fixed and there is no time dependence, thus we have:

$$
\begin{equation*}
A=\omega C \tag{F.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

$$
\begin{equation*}
B=-D \tag{F.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

$$
\begin{equation*}
C=\frac{1}{\omega+\omega^{-1}} \tag{F.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

$$
\begin{equation*}
\text { and } \quad D=\frac{\Lambda}{a}=\frac{1}{2}(a-1) C+A, \tag{F.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

giving,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathbf{v}_{0}=\frac{1}{\omega+\omega^{-1}}(\omega, 1) \tag{F.14}
\end{equation*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathbf{v}_{1}=\frac{1}{\omega+\omega^{-1}}\left(\omega x-\omega-\frac{(a-1)}{2}, x+\omega+\frac{(a-1)}{2}\right) \tag{F.15}
\end{equation*}
$$

as given in [46].

## F. 2 Period 2

Now for a period 2 continued fraction $a_{n}=a_{n-2}$, and we obtain

$$
\begin{align*}
A_{n} & =\omega_{n-1} C_{n-1},  \tag{F.16}\\
B_{n} & =-D_{n-1},  \tag{F.17}\\
C_{n} & =\omega_{n-1}-\omega_{n-1}^{2} C_{n-1}=\frac{\omega_{n-1}}{1+\omega_{n-1} \omega_{n}},  \tag{F.18}\\
D_{n} & =\Lambda_{n-1}-a_{n-1} D_{n-1}+D_{n}  \tag{F.19}\\
& =\Lambda_{n} / a_{n}  \tag{F.20}\\
& =\left(\frac{1}{2}\left(a_{n}-1\right)+\omega_{n}\right) \frac{\omega_{n-1}}{1+\omega_{n-1} \omega_{n}} . \tag{F.21}
\end{align*}
$$

Thus,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathbf{v}_{0}^{n}=\frac{1}{1+\omega_{n-1} \omega_{n}}\left(\omega_{n-1} \omega_{n}, \omega_{n-1}\right) \tag{F.22}
\end{equation*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{align*}
\mathbf{v}_{1}^{n}= & \frac{1}{1+\omega_{n-1} \omega_{n}} \\
& \left(\omega_{n-1} \omega_{n} x-\omega_{n} \frac{\left(a_{n-1}-1\right)}{2}-\omega_{n-1} \omega_{n}, \omega_{n-1} x+\omega_{n-1} \frac{\left(a_{n}-1\right)}{2}-\omega_{n-1} \omega_{n}\right) . \tag{F.23}
\end{align*}
$$

## F. 3 Period-p

For a general period-p continued fraction we have that $a_{n}=a_{n-p}$, this leads us to the following: again $A_{n}=\omega_{n-1} C_{n-1}$ and $B_{n}=-D_{n-1}$, but now we
have,

$$
\begin{align*}
C_{n}= & \omega_{n-1}-\omega_{n-2} \omega_{n-1}^{2}+\ldots+(-1)^{p-1} \omega_{n-p} \omega_{n-1}^{2} \ldots \omega_{n-p+1}^{2} \\
& +(-1)^{p} \omega_{n-1}^{2} \ldots \omega_{n-p}^{2} C_{n-p}  \tag{F.24}\\
= & \frac{\sum_{j=0}^{p-1} \omega_{n-1-j} \prod_{i=1}^{j}\left(-\omega_{n-i}^{2}\right)}{1-\prod_{k=1}^{p}\left(-\omega_{n-k}^{2}\right)} . \tag{F.25}
\end{align*}
$$

For $D_{n}$ we write the recurrence

$$
\binom{D_{n-1}}{D_{n}}=\left(\begin{array}{cc}
0 & 1  \tag{F.26}\\
1 & -a_{n-1}
\end{array}\right)\binom{D_{n-2}}{D_{n-1}}+\binom{0}{\Lambda_{n-1}}
$$

as

$$
\begin{equation*}
x_{n}=M_{n-1} x_{n-1}+b_{n} \tag{F.27}
\end{equation*}
$$

where

$$
M_{n}=\left(\begin{array}{cc}
0 & 1  \tag{F.28}\\
1 & -a_{n}
\end{array}\right) \quad \text { and } \quad M_{n}^{-1}=\left(\begin{array}{cc}
a_{n} & 1 \\
1 & 0
\end{array}\right) .
$$

Using the convention $\omega_{k}=\left[a_{k+1}, a_{k+2}, \ldots\right]$ and $\hat{\omega}_{k}=\left[a_{k}, a_{k-1}, \ldots\right]$ with

$$
\hat{\gamma}_{s}^{t}=\left\{\begin{array}{cc}
\hat{\omega}_{s} \ldots \hat{\omega}_{t}, & t \geq s  \tag{F.29}\\
1, & t<s
\end{array}\right.
$$

we see that

$$
\begin{equation*}
M_{n}\binom{1}{\omega_{n-1}}=\binom{\omega_{n-1}}{1-a_{n} \omega_{n-1}}=\omega_{n-1}\binom{1}{\omega_{n}} \tag{F.30}
\end{equation*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{equation*}
M_{n}^{-1}\binom{-\hat{\omega}_{n}}{1}=\binom{1-a_{n} \hat{\omega}_{n}}{-\hat{\omega}_{n}}=-\hat{\omega}_{n}\binom{-\hat{\omega}_{n-1}}{1} . \tag{F.31}
\end{equation*}
$$

We use

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathbf{v}_{n}^{1}=\binom{1}{\omega_{n-1}} \quad \text { and } \quad \mathbf{v}_{n}^{2}=\binom{-\hat{\omega}_{n-1}}{1} \tag{F.32}
\end{equation*}
$$

as a basis at $n$. Writing

$$
\begin{equation*}
x_{n}=x_{n}^{1} \mathbf{v}_{n}^{1}+x_{n}^{2} \mathbf{v}_{n}^{2} \tag{F.33}
\end{equation*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{equation*}
b_{n}=b_{n}^{1} \mathbf{v}_{n}^{1}+b_{n}^{2} \mathbf{v}_{n}^{2} \tag{F.34}
\end{equation*}
$$

equation (F.27) becomes:

$$
\begin{align*}
x_{n}^{1} \mathbf{v}_{n}^{1}+x_{n}^{2} \mathbf{v}_{n}^{2} & =M_{n-1}\left(x_{n-1}^{1} \mathbf{v}_{n-1}^{1}+x_{n-1}^{2} \mathbf{v}_{n-1}^{2}\right)+b_{n}^{1} \mathbf{v}_{n}^{1}+b_{n}^{2} \mathbf{v}_{n}^{2}  \tag{F.35}\\
& =\omega_{n-2} \mathbf{v}_{n}^{1} x_{n-1}^{1}-\hat{\omega}_{n-1}^{-1} \mathbf{v}_{n}^{2} x_{n-1}^{2}+b_{n}^{1} \mathbf{v}_{n}^{1}+b_{n}^{2} \mathbf{v}_{n}^{2} \tag{F.36}
\end{align*}
$$

which gives the two first order recurrences:

$$
\begin{array}{r}
x_{n}^{1}=\omega_{n-2} x_{n-1}^{1}+b_{n}^{1} \\
x_{n}^{2}=-\hat{\omega}_{n-1}^{-1} x_{n-1}^{2}+b_{n}^{2} \tag{F.38}
\end{array}
$$

where $b_{n}$ is given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
\binom{0}{\Lambda_{n-1}}=b_{n}^{1} \mathbf{v}_{n}^{1}+b_{n}^{2} \mathbf{v}_{n}^{2}=\binom{1}{\omega_{n-1}} b_{n}^{1}+\binom{-\hat{\omega}_{n-1}}{1} b_{n}^{2} \tag{F.39}
\end{equation*}
$$

so that

$$
\begin{equation*}
b_{n}^{1}=\frac{\Lambda_{n-1}}{\omega_{n-1}+\hat{\omega}_{n-1}^{-1}}, \quad \text { and } \quad b_{n}^{2}=\frac{\Lambda_{n-1}}{\omega_{n-1} \hat{\omega}_{n-1}+1} . \tag{F.40}
\end{equation*}
$$

The solution of (F.37) is given by:

$$
\begin{align*}
x_{n}^{1}= & b_{n}^{1}+\omega_{n-2} b_{n-1}^{1}+\omega_{n-2} \omega_{n-3} b_{n-2}^{1}+\ldots+\omega_{n-2} \ldots \omega_{n-p-1} b_{n-p}^{1} \\
& +\omega_{n-2} \ldots \omega_{n-p}\left(\omega_{n-p-1} x_{n-p}^{1}+b_{n-p+1}^{1}\right)  \tag{F.41}\\
= & \frac{b_{n}^{1}+\ldots+\omega_{n-2} \ldots \omega_{n-p} b_{n-p+1}^{1}}{1-\omega_{n-2} \ldots \omega_{n-p-1}}  \tag{F.42}\\
= & \frac{1}{1-\gamma_{0}^{p}} \sum_{s=0}^{p-1} b_{n-s}^{1} \gamma_{n-s-1}^{n-1} \tag{F.43}
\end{align*}
$$

while the solution of (F.38) is given by:

$$
\begin{align*}
x_{n}^{2}= & -\hat{\omega}_{n} x_{n+1}^{2}+\hat{\omega}_{n} b_{n+1}^{2}  \tag{F.44}\\
= & \hat{\omega}_{n} b_{n+1}^{2}-\hat{\omega}_{n} \hat{\omega}_{n+1} b_{n+2}^{2}+\ldots+(-1)^{p-1} \hat{\omega}_{n} \ldots \hat{\omega}_{n+p-1} b_{n+p}^{2} \\
& +(-1)^{p} \hat{\omega}_{n} \ldots \hat{\omega}_{n+p-1} x_{n+p}^{2}  \tag{F.45}\\
= & \frac{\sum_{s=0}^{p-1}(-1)^{s} b_{n+s+1}^{2} \hat{\omega}_{n} \ldots \hat{\omega}_{n+s}}{1-(-1)^{p} \hat{\omega}_{n} \ldots \hat{\omega}_{n+p-1}}  \tag{F.46}\\
= & \frac{1}{1-(-1)^{p} \hat{\gamma}_{1}^{p}} \sum_{s=0}^{p-1}(-1)^{s} b_{n+s+1}^{2} \hat{\gamma}_{n}^{n+s} . \tag{F.47}
\end{align*}
$$

Now equation (F.33) becomes

$$
\begin{equation*}
\binom{D_{n-1}}{D_{n}}=x_{n}^{1}\binom{1}{\omega_{n-1}}+x_{n}^{2}\binom{-\hat{\omega}_{n-1}}{1} \tag{F.48}
\end{equation*}
$$

then

$$
\begin{equation*}
D_{n}=\frac{\omega_{n-1}}{1-\gamma_{0}^{p}} \sum_{s=0}^{p-1} \frac{\gamma_{n-s-1}^{n-1} \Lambda_{n-s-1}}{\omega_{n-s-1}+\hat{\omega}_{n-s-1}^{-1}}+\frac{1}{1-(-1)^{p} \hat{\gamma}_{1}^{p}} \sum_{s=0}^{p-1} \frac{(-1)^{s} \hat{\gamma}_{n}^{n+s} \Lambda_{n+s}}{\omega_{n+s} \hat{\omega}_{n+s}+1} . \tag{F.49}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then $\mathbf{v}_{0}^{n}=\left(A_{n}, C_{n}\right)$ and $\mathbf{v}_{1}^{n}=\left(A_{n} x+B_{n}, C_{n} x+D_{n}\right)$ are determined for any period $p$.

We conclude that the spectral radius of $R_{0, n}^{p} P_{n}$ is $\left(\omega_{0} \ldots \omega_{p-1}\right)$, and further deduce that there exist constants $K>0$ and $0<\rho<1$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|R_{0, n}^{\ell}\right\| \leq K \rho^{\ell}, \quad \text { for } \quad \ell \geq 0 \tag{F.50}
\end{equation*}
$$

## F. 4 General $\omega$

For non-periodic $\omega$ equations (F.43) and (F.47) become:

$$
\begin{equation*}
x_{n}^{1}=\sum_{s=0}^{\infty} \gamma_{n-s-1}^{n-1} b_{n-s}^{1} \tag{F.51}
\end{equation*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{equation*}
x_{n}^{2}=\sum_{s=0}^{\infty}(-1)^{s} \hat{\gamma}_{n}^{n+s} b_{n+1+s}^{2} . \tag{F.52}
\end{equation*}
$$

Thus (F.49) becomes:

$$
\begin{equation*}
D_{n}=\omega_{n-1} \sum_{s=0}^{\infty} \frac{\gamma_{n-s-1}^{n-1} \Lambda_{n-s-1}}{\omega_{n-s-1}+\hat{\omega}_{n-s-1}^{-1}}+\sum_{s=0}^{\infty} \frac{(-1)^{s} \hat{\gamma}_{n}^{n+s} \Lambda_{n+s}}{\omega_{n+s} \hat{\omega}_{n+s}+1} . \tag{F.53}
\end{equation*}
$$

For $C_{n}$ equation (F.25) becomes:

$$
\begin{equation*}
C_{n}=\sum_{j=0}^{\infty} \omega_{n-1-j} \prod_{i=1}^{j}\left(-\omega_{n-i}^{2}\right) \tag{F.54}
\end{equation*}
$$

We also have $A_{n}=\omega_{n-1} C_{n-1}$ and $B_{n}=-D_{n-1}$ as before to give $\mathbf{v}_{0}^{n}$ and $\mathbf{v}_{1}^{n}$ for any $\omega$.

## G. PROOF OF LEMMA 5

Here we give the proof of Lemma 5, which states that there exist $\delta>0$ and $L>0$ (depending on $\mathbf{a}$ and $\mathbf{c}$ ) such that the function $H^{n, 1}=\left(u_{n+1}^{1}, t_{n+1}^{1}\right) \in$ $\mathcal{F}_{n+1}^{\delta}$ satisfies

1. $u_{n+1}^{1}(x)>0$ for $x \in \bar{V}_{1}^{n+1} \cap \mathbb{R}$, and $t_{n+1}^{1}(x)>0$ for $x \in \bar{V}_{0}^{n+1} \cap \mathbb{R}$;
2. $\left\|H^{n, 1}\right\| \leq L$.

Proof. If we let $H^{n, 1}=\log \left(u_{n+1}^{1}, t_{n+1}^{1}\right)$, then comparing with equations (4.454.51) we show that $u_{n+1}^{1}(x)>0$ for $x \in \bar{V}_{1}^{n+1} \cap \mathbb{R}$, and $t_{n+1}^{1}(x)>0$ for $x \in \bar{V}_{0}^{n+1} \cap \mathbb{R}$ in the following way: For case (i) and (ii) $u_{n+1}^{1}(x)=\omega_{n}>0$ for all $x$ and it remains to show that $y_{n}-\theta_{i}^{n}(x)>0$ for $x \in \bar{V}_{0}^{n+1} \cap \mathbb{R}$ where (i) $i=1, \ldots, a_{n}$, and (ii) $i=1, \ldots, a_{n}-1$. For $x \in \bar{V}_{0}^{n+1} \cap \mathbb{R}$ we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\theta_{i}^{n}(x) \in\left[-\omega_{n}-\omega_{n} \delta-i, 1-\omega_{n}+\omega_{n} \delta-i\right], \tag{G.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

so that for (i)

$$
\begin{equation*}
\theta_{i}^{n}(x) \in\left[-\omega_{n}-a_{n}-\omega_{n} \delta,-\omega_{n}+\omega_{n} \delta\right], \tag{G.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

and for (ii)

$$
\begin{equation*}
\theta_{i}^{n}(x) \in\left[-\omega_{n}-\left(a_{n}-1\right)-\omega_{n} \delta,-\omega_{n}+\omega_{n} \delta\right], \tag{G.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

then $y_{n}-\theta_{i}^{n}(x)>-\omega_{n} \delta$ in each case since $y_{n} \in\left(-\omega_{n}, 1\right)$.
Since $\left(a_{k}\right)_{k \in \mathbb{Z}}$ and $\mathbf{c}=\left(c_{k}\right)_{k \in \mathbb{Z}}$ are periodic, we can choose $\delta>0$ sufficiently small such that $y_{n}-\theta_{i}^{n}(x)>0$, i.e. $t_{n+1}^{1}>0$ as required.

Now for cases (iii) and (iv), $u_{n+1}^{1}=\theta_{0}^{n}(x)-y_{n}$. We need to show that this is greater than zero for $x \in \bar{V}_{1}^{n+1} \cap \mathbb{R}$. Here we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\theta_{0}^{n}(x)=\left[1-\omega_{n}-\omega_{n} \delta, 1+\omega_{n} \delta\right] \tag{G.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

and $y_{n} \in\left(-\omega_{n}-c_{n},-\omega_{n}-\left(c_{n}-1\right)\right)$, so we see that $y_{n}<\theta_{0}^{n}(x)$ so that $u_{n+1}^{1}>0$.

Finally,

$$
\begin{equation*}
t_{n+1}^{1}(x)=\omega_{n}\left(\prod_{i=0}^{c_{n}-1} \theta_{i}^{n}(x)-y_{n}\right)\left(\prod_{j=c_{n}+1}^{k} y_{n}-\theta_{j}^{n}(x)\right) \tag{G.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

where for case (iii) $k=a_{n}$, so that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\theta_{j}^{n}(x) \in\left[-\omega_{n}-a_{n}-\omega_{n} \delta,-\omega_{n}+\omega_{n} \delta-c_{n}\right] \tag{G.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

and for (iv) $k=a_{n}-1$, and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\theta_{j}^{n}(x) \in\left[-\omega_{n}-\left(a_{n}-1\right)-\omega_{n} \delta,-\omega_{n}+\omega_{n} \delta-c_{n}\right], \tag{G.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

for $x \in \bar{V}_{0}^{n+1} \cap \mathbb{R}$, in either case:

$$
\begin{equation*}
y_{n}-\theta_{j}^{n}(x)>-\omega_{n} \delta, \tag{G.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

then as before we may choose $\delta$ such that $y_{n}-\theta_{j}^{n}(x)>0$. It can also be shown that $\prod_{i=0}^{c_{n}-1}\left(\theta_{i}^{n}(x)-y_{n}\right)>0$ since

$$
\begin{equation*}
\theta_{i}^{n}(x) \in\left[-\omega_{n}-\left(c_{n}-1\right)-\omega_{n} \delta, 1-\omega_{n}+\omega_{n} \delta\right], \tag{G.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

for $x \in \bar{V}_{0}^{n+1} \cap \mathbb{R}$, so that $\theta_{i}^{n}(x)-y_{n}>\omega_{n} \delta$, if we choose $\delta$ sufficiently small such that $\theta_{i}^{n}(x)-y_{n}>0$, thus in case (iii) and (iv) $t_{n+1}^{1}>0$ as required.

Part 2 of the lemma is proved separately. See Lemma 9, Appendix I.

## H. DETAILS OF THE CONSTRUCTION OF $\mathcal{E}$

In this section we give the details of the construction of $\mathcal{E}_{n}$. Recalling the definitions given in section 4.1.3, we define $\mathcal{E}_{n}=h^{n} \exp \left(K^{n}\right)$ where $K^{n}=$ $K^{n}(\mathbf{c}) \in \mathcal{F}_{n}^{\delta}$, and satisfies the equation $H^{n, 1}+R_{0, n} K^{n}=K^{n+1}$ in $\mathcal{F}_{n+1}^{\delta}$. This equation is derived as follows. From (4.36) we have

$$
\begin{align*}
R_{n} \mathcal{E}_{n} & =\kappa_{c_{n}}(+1,+1) \mathcal{E}_{n+1}  \tag{H.1}\\
& =\kappa_{c_{n}}(+1,+1) h^{n+1} \exp \left(K^{n+1}\right), \tag{H.2}
\end{align*}
$$

and, from (4.41), we obtain

$$
\begin{align*}
R_{n} \mathcal{E}_{n} & =R_{n}\left(h^{n} \exp \left(K^{n}\right)\right)  \tag{H.3}\\
& =\kappa_{c_{n}}(+1,+1) h^{n+1}(\mathbf{c}) \exp \left(H^{n, 1}(\mathbf{c})\right) \exp \left(R_{0, n} K^{n}\right)  \tag{H.4}\\
& =\kappa_{c_{n}}(+1,+1) h^{n+1} \exp \left(H^{n, 1}+R_{0, n} K^{n}\right) . \tag{H.5}
\end{align*}
$$

Comparing (H.5) with (H.2) we see that we require

$$
\begin{equation*}
K^{n+1}=H^{n, 1}(\mathbf{c})+R_{0, n} K^{n} . \tag{H.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

We now construct $K^{n}$. Defining $H^{n, 0}=\log \left|h^{n}\right|$ we confirm that

$$
\begin{equation*}
R_{0, n} H^{n, 0}=H^{n+1,0}+H^{n, 1} \tag{H.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $H^{n, 1} \in \mathcal{F}_{n+1}^{\delta}$ is as before.
Making use of the relation $R_{n} \exp (U, T)=\exp R_{0, n}(U, T)$ and (4.41) we have:

$$
\begin{align*}
R_{0, n} H^{n, 0} & =\log \left|R_{n} \exp H^{n, 0}\right|  \tag{H.8}\\
& =\log \left|R_{n} h^{n}\right|  \tag{H.9}\\
& =\log \left|\kappa_{c_{n}} h^{n+1} \exp \left(H^{n, 1}\right)\right|  \tag{H.10}\\
& =\log \left|h^{n+1}\right|+H^{n, 1}  \tag{H.11}\\
& =H^{n+1,0}+H^{n, 1} . \tag{H.12}
\end{align*}
$$

Using the notation $R_{n}^{\ell}=R_{n+\ell-1} R_{n+\ell-2} \ldots R_{n}$ and similarly for $R_{0, n}^{\ell}$, we define:

$$
\begin{equation*}
H^{n, \ell}=R_{0, n+1}^{\ell-1} H^{n, 1} \in \mathcal{F}_{n+\ell}^{\delta}, \tag{H.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\hat{H}^{n, \ell}=R_{0, n+1}^{\ell-1} P_{0, n+1} H^{n, 1} . \tag{H.14}
\end{equation*}
$$

From (H.14) we have that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\hat{H}^{n-k, k}=R_{0, n-k+1}^{k-1} P_{0, n-k+1} H^{n-k, 1} . \tag{H.15}
\end{equation*}
$$

Now, if we let

$$
\begin{equation*}
\hat{G}^{n}=\sum_{k=1}^{\infty} \hat{H}^{n-k, k}, \tag{H.16}
\end{equation*}
$$

then $\hat{G}^{n}$ converges and $R_{0, n} \hat{G}^{n}+\hat{H}^{n, 1}=\hat{G}^{n+1}$ since:

$$
\begin{align*}
R_{0, n} \hat{G}^{n} & =\sum_{k=1}^{\infty} R_{0, n} \hat{H}^{n-k, k}  \tag{H.17}\\
& =\sum_{k=1}^{\infty} \hat{H}^{n-k, k+1}  \tag{H.18}\\
& =-\hat{H}^{n, 1}+\sum_{k=0}^{\infty} \hat{H}^{n-k, k+1}, \tag{H.19}
\end{align*}
$$

then replacing $k$ by $k^{\prime}=k+1$ we have,

$$
\begin{align*}
R_{0, n} \hat{G}^{n}+\hat{H}^{n, 1} & =\sum_{k^{\prime}=1}^{\infty} \hat{H}^{n+1-k^{\prime}, k^{\prime}}  \tag{H.20}\\
& =\hat{G}^{n+1}, \tag{H.21}
\end{align*}
$$

as required.
Finally, defining $K^{n}=\hat{G}^{n}-\left(I-P_{0, n}\right) H^{n, 0} \in \mathcal{F}_{n}^{\delta}$, we can show that $H^{n, 1}+$
$R_{0, n} K^{n}=K^{n+1}$ as follows:

$$
\begin{align*}
R_{0, n} K^{n} & =R_{0, n} \hat{G}^{n}-R_{0, n}\left(I-P_{0, n}\right) H^{n, 0}  \tag{H.22}\\
& =\hat{G}^{n+1}-\hat{H}^{n, 1}-\left(I-P_{0, n+1}\right) R_{0, n} H^{n, 0}  \tag{H.23}\\
& =\hat{G}^{n+1}-\hat{H}^{n, 1}-\left(I-P_{0, n+1}\right)\left(H^{n+1,0}+H^{n, 1}\right)  \tag{H.24}\\
& =\hat{G}^{n+1}-\left(I-P_{0, n+1}\right) H^{n+1,0}-\hat{H}^{n, 1}-\left(I-P_{0, n+1}\right) H^{n, 1}  \tag{H.25}\\
& =\hat{G}^{n+1}-\left(I-P_{0, n+1}\right) H^{n+1,0}-P_{0, n+1} H^{n, 1}-H^{n, 1}+P_{0, n+1} H^{n, 1}
\end{align*}
$$

$$
\begin{equation*}
=K^{n+1}-H^{n, 1} \tag{H.26}
\end{equation*}
$$

where we have made use of equations (H.21), (4.52), and (H.14) and the fact that $\hat{H}^{n, 1}=P_{0, n+1} H^{n, 1}$. From (H.27) we see that

$$
\begin{equation*}
R_{0, n} K^{n}+H^{n, 1}=K^{n+1} \tag{H.28}
\end{equation*}
$$

as required.

## I. PROOF OF LEMMA 9

Here we prove lemma 9.

Lemma 9. There exists a constant $L>0$ (independent of $k$ and $n$ ) such that $\left\|H^{n-k, 1}\right\| \leq L$, provided $\delta>0$ is chosen sufficiently small.

Proof. Let $H^{n-k, 1}=(U, T)$ where $H^{n-k, 1} \in \mathcal{F}_{n-k+1}^{\delta}$. Then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|H^{n-k, 1}\right\|=\|U\|_{1}+\|T\|_{1} \tag{I.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $U$ and $T$ are given by equations (4.45), (4.47), (4.49) and (4.51).

We make use of the identities (3.73) and letting $n^{\prime}=n-k$ we take first the case $c_{n^{\prime}}=0$ then $\|U\|_{1}=\left|\log \omega_{n^{\prime}}\right|$. Since the sequence $\omega_{j}$ is periodic with period $p$ we may choose

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{L}{2} \geq \max _{1 \leq j \leq p}\left|\log \omega_{j}\right| \tag{I.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

then clearly $\|U\|_{1} \leq L / 2$ independently of $n^{\prime}$ and $k$.
If $c_{n^{\prime}} \neq 0$ then $\|U\|_{1}=\left\|\log \left(\theta_{0}^{n^{\prime}}(x)-y_{n^{\prime}}\right)\right\|_{1}$. Now,

$$
\begin{align*}
\log \left(\theta_{0}^{n^{\prime}}(x)-y_{n^{\prime}}\right) & =\log \left(\theta_{0}^{n^{\prime}}(x)-\theta_{0}^{n^{\prime}}\left(\theta_{0}^{n^{\prime}}\right)^{-1}\left(y_{n^{\prime}}\right)\right)  \tag{I.3}\\
& =\log \omega_{n^{\prime}}+\log \left(\left(\theta_{0}^{n^{\prime}}\right)^{-1}\left(y_{n^{\prime}}\right)-x\right) \tag{I.4}
\end{align*}
$$

thus, $\left\|\log \left(\theta_{0}^{n^{\prime}}(x)-y_{n^{\prime}}\right)\right\|_{1} \leq\left|\log \omega_{n^{\prime}}\right|+\left\|\log \left(\left(\theta_{0}^{n^{\prime}}\right)^{-1}\left(y_{n^{\prime}}\right)-x\right)\right\|_{1}$.
Now since $y_{n^{\prime}} \in\left(-\omega_{n^{\prime}}-c_{n^{\prime}},-\omega_{n^{\prime}}-c_{n^{\prime}}+1\right)$, then $\left(\theta_{0}^{n^{\prime}}\right)^{-1}\left(y_{n^{\prime}}\right) \in\left(1-\omega_{n^{\prime}}^{-1}+\right.$ $\left.c_{n^{\prime}} \omega_{n^{\prime}}^{-1}, 1+c_{n^{\prime}} \omega_{n^{\prime}}^{-1}\right)$, and in this case $c_{n^{\prime}} \neq 0$ so $\left(\theta_{0}^{n^{\prime}}\right)^{-1}\left(y_{n^{\prime}}\right) \in\left(1,1+a_{n^{\prime}} \omega_{n^{\prime}}^{-1}\right)$ and then $\left|\left(\theta_{0}^{n^{\prime}}\right)^{-1}\left(y_{n^{\prime}}\right)-c_{1}^{n^{\prime}+1}\right|>1$. Recalling that $U$ is defined on $V_{1}^{n^{\prime}+1}$, we now make use of the following result from [45]:

Lemma 10. Let $c, r \in \mathbb{R}, r>0$ and let $y \in \mathbb{R}, y \notin \overline{D(c, r)}$. Let

$$
f(x)= \begin{cases}\log (y-x), & y>c+r  \tag{I.5}\\ \log (x-y), & y<c-r\end{cases}
$$

Then as a function of $x \in D(c, r)$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\|f\|_{1}=|\log | y-c| |+\log |y-c|-\log (|y-c|-r) \tag{I.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

Hence, we see that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|\log \left(\left(\theta_{0}^{n^{\prime}}\right)^{-1}\left(y_{n^{\prime}}\right)-x\right)\right\|_{1}=\log \frac{\left|\left(\theta_{0}^{n^{\prime}}\right)^{-1}\left(y_{n^{\prime}}\right)-c_{1}^{n^{\prime}+1}\right|^{2}}{\left|\left(\theta_{0}^{n^{\prime}}\right)^{-1}\left(y_{n^{\prime}}\right)-c_{1}^{n^{\prime}+1}\right|-r_{1}^{n^{\prime}+1}} \tag{I.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

which assumes that $\left(\theta_{0}^{n^{\prime}}\right)^{-1}\left(y_{n^{\prime}}\right)>-\omega_{n^{\prime}+1}-a_{n^{\prime}+1}+1+\delta$, i.e. $c_{n^{\prime}} \omega_{n^{\prime}}^{-1}>\delta$. This is true since $c_{n^{\prime}} \neq 0$ in this case, provided $\delta<1$ which we assume from now on.

So now,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\|U\|_{1}=\left|\log \omega_{n^{\prime}}\right|+\log \frac{\left|\left(\theta_{0}^{n^{\prime}}\right)^{-1}\left(y_{n^{\prime}}\right)-c_{1}^{n^{\prime}+1}\right|^{2}}{\left|\left(\theta_{0}^{n^{\prime}}\right)^{-1}\left(y_{n^{\prime}}\right)-c_{1}^{n^{\prime}+1}\right|-r_{1}^{n^{\prime}+1}} \tag{I.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

For $\delta<1 / 2$, there clearly exists $\delta_{1}>0$ such that $\left|\left(\theta_{0}^{n^{\prime}}\right)^{-1}\left(y_{n^{\prime}}\right)-c_{1}^{n^{\prime}+1}\right|-$ $r_{1}^{n^{\prime}+1}>\delta_{1}$ since $\left|\left(\theta_{0}^{n^{\prime}}\right)^{-1}\left(y_{n^{\prime}}\right)-c_{1}^{n^{\prime}+1}\right|>1$ and $r_{1}^{n^{\prime}}=\frac{1}{2}+\delta$. We also see that $\left|\left(\theta_{0}^{n^{\prime}}\right)^{-1}\left(y_{n^{\prime}}\right)-c_{1}^{n^{\prime}+1}\right|<\frac{1}{2}+\left(c_{n^{\prime}}+1\right) \omega_{n^{\prime}}^{-1}<K$ for constant $K$, independently of $n^{\prime}$, since $c_{n}^{\prime} \leq \max _{1 \leq j \leq p} a_{j}$ and $\omega_{n^{\prime}}^{-1} \leq\left(\min _{1 \leq j \leq p} \omega_{j}\right)^{-1}$. Then,

$$
\begin{align*}
\|U\|_{1} & \leq \max _{1 \leq j \leq p}\left|\log \omega_{j}\right|+\log \left(\frac{K^{2}}{\delta_{1}}\right)  \tag{I.9}\\
& \leq L / 2 \tag{I.10}
\end{align*}
$$

for some choice of $L$.

Firstly, for $c_{n^{\prime}}=0$ :

$$
\begin{equation*}
T(x)=\log \left(\omega_{n^{\prime}} \prod_{i=1}^{\ell}\left(y_{n^{\prime}}-\theta_{i}^{n^{\prime}}(x)\right)\right) \tag{I.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\ell=a_{n^{\prime}}$ for $c_{n^{\prime}-1}=0$ and $\ell=a_{n^{\prime}}-1$ for $c_{n^{\prime}-1} \neq 0$. We can write this as

$$
\begin{equation*}
T(x)=\log \omega_{n^{\prime}}+\sum_{i=1}^{\ell} \log \left(y_{n^{\prime}}-\theta_{i}^{n^{\prime}}(x)\right) . \tag{I.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\|T\|_{1} \leq\left|\log \omega_{n^{\prime}}\right|+\sum_{i=1}^{\ell}\left\|\log \left(y_{n^{\prime}}-\theta_{i}^{n^{\prime}}(x)\right)\right\|_{1} . \tag{I.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

Now,

$$
\begin{align*}
\log \left(y_{n^{\prime}}-\theta_{i}^{n^{\prime}}(x)\right) & =\log \left(\theta_{i}^{n^{\prime}}\left(\theta_{i}^{n^{\prime}}\right)^{-1}\left(y_{n^{\prime}}\right)-\theta_{i}^{n^{\prime}}(x)\right)  \tag{I.14}\\
& =\log \omega_{n^{\prime}}+\log \left(x-\left(\theta_{i}^{n^{\prime}}\right)^{-1}\left(y_{n^{\prime}}\right)\right) \tag{I.15}
\end{align*}
$$

where $1 \leq i \leq \ell$. Thus,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|\log \left(y_{n^{\prime}}-\theta_{i}^{n^{\prime}}(x)\right)\right\|_{1} \leq\left|\log \omega_{n^{\prime}}\right|+\left\|\log \left(x-\left(\theta_{i}^{n^{\prime}}\right)^{-1}\left(y_{n^{\prime}}\right)\right)\right\|_{1} . \tag{I.16}
\end{equation*}
$$

Since $c_{n^{\prime}}=0$ we have $y_{n^{\prime}} \in\left(-\omega_{n^{\prime}}, 1\right)$ and $\left(\theta_{i}^{n^{\prime}}\right)^{-1}\left(y_{n^{\prime}}\right) \in\left(-\omega_{n^{\prime}}^{-1}-i \omega_{n^{\prime}}^{-1}, 1-\right.$ $\left.i \omega_{n^{\prime}}^{-1}\right)$, and since $T$ is defined on $V_{0}^{n^{\prime}+1}$ we require that $\left(\theta_{i}^{n^{\prime}}\right)^{-1}\left(y_{n^{\prime}}\right)<1-$ $\frac{1}{2} \omega_{n^{\prime}}^{-1}-\frac{1}{2} \omega_{n^{\prime}}^{-1}-\delta$ i.e. $1-i \omega_{n^{\prime}}^{-1}<1-\omega_{n^{\prime}}^{-1}-\delta$ which is true for $i>1$ provided $\delta>0$ is sufficiently small. Since we have $i \geq 1$ then in principle $\left(\theta_{i}^{n^{\prime}}\right)^{-1}\left(y_{n^{\prime}}\right)$ could get arbitrarily close to $V_{0}^{n^{\prime}+1}$. However, assuming a periodic code $\left(c_{k}\right)_{k \in \mathbb{Z}}$ as well as a periodic continued fraction, we can say that there exists $\delta_{2}>0$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\min _{n^{\prime}}\left|\left(-\omega_{n^{\prime}+1}-a_{n^{\prime}+1}+1\right)-\left(\theta_{i}^{n^{\prime}}\right)^{-1}\left(y_{n^{\prime}}\right)\right|-r_{0}^{n^{\prime}+1}>\delta_{2}, \tag{I.17}
\end{equation*}
$$

again provided $\delta$ is taken small enough. Now making use of lemma 10,

$$
\begin{align*}
\| \log \left(x-\left(\theta_{i}^{n^{\prime}}\right)^{-1}\left(y_{n^{\prime}}\right) \|_{1}=\right. & |\log |\left(\theta_{i}^{n^{\prime}}\right)^{-1}\left(y_{n^{\prime}}\right)-1+\frac{1}{2} \omega_{n^{\prime}}^{-1} \| \\
& +\log \left|\left(\theta_{i}^{n^{\prime}}\right)^{-1}\left(y_{n^{\prime}}\right)-1+\frac{1}{2} \omega_{n^{\prime}}^{-1}\right| \\
& -\log \left(\left|\left(\theta_{i}^{n^{\prime}}\right)^{-1}\left(y_{n^{\prime}}\right)-1+\frac{1}{2} \omega_{n^{\prime}}^{-1}\right|-\frac{1}{2} \omega_{n^{\prime}}^{-1}-\delta\right) . \tag{I.18}
\end{align*}
$$

Now if $\left|\left(\theta_{i}^{n^{\prime}}\right)^{-1}\left(y_{n^{\prime}}\right)-1+\frac{1}{2} \omega_{n^{\prime}}^{-1}\right|>1$ then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|\log \left(x-\left(\theta_{i}^{n^{\prime}}\right)^{-1}\left(y_{n^{\prime}}\right)\right)\right\|_{1}=\log \left(\frac{\left|\left(\theta_{i}^{n^{\prime}}\right)^{-1}\left(y_{n^{\prime}}\right)-1+\frac{1}{2} \omega_{n^{\prime}}^{-1}\right|^{2}}{\left|\left(\theta_{i}^{n^{\prime}}\right)^{-1}\left(y_{n^{\prime}}\right)-1+\frac{1}{2} \omega_{n^{\prime}}^{-1}\right|-\frac{1}{2} \omega_{n^{\prime}}^{-1}-\delta}\right) \tag{I.19}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\left|\left(\theta_{i}^{n^{\prime}}\right)^{-1}\left(y_{n^{\prime}}\right)-1+\frac{1}{2} \omega_{n^{\prime}}^{-1}\right|<\left|\left(\frac{1}{2}-i\right)\right| \omega_{n^{\prime}}^{-1}<K$ for some constant $K$ then

$$
\begin{align*}
\|T\|_{1} & \leq \max _{1 \leq j \leq p}\left|\log \omega_{j}\right|+\left(\sum_{i=1}^{\ell}\left(\max _{1 \leq j \leq p}\left|\log \omega_{j}\right|\right)+\log \left(\frac{K^{2}}{\delta_{2}}\right)\right)  \tag{I.20}\\
& \leq(1+\ell) \max _{1 \leq j \leq p}\left|\log \omega_{j}\right|+\ell \log \left(\frac{K^{2}}{\delta_{2}}\right)  \tag{I.21}\\
& \leq \frac{L}{2} \tag{I.22}
\end{align*}
$$

for some $L$ independent of $n^{\prime}$ and $k$. If $\left|\left(\theta_{i}^{n^{\prime}}\right)^{-1}\left(y_{n^{\prime}}\right)-1+\frac{1}{2} \omega_{n^{\prime}}^{-1}\right| \leq 1$, then

$$
\begin{align*}
\|T\|_{1} & \leq(1+\ell) \max _{1 \leq j \leq p}\left|\log \omega_{j}\right|+\ell \log \left(\frac{1}{\delta_{2}}\right)  \tag{I.23}\\
& \leq \frac{L}{2} \tag{I.24}
\end{align*}
$$

again for some $L$ independent of $n^{\prime}$ and $k$.
Finally, for $c_{n^{\prime}} \neq 0$

$$
\begin{equation*}
T(x)=\log \left(\omega_{n^{\prime}} \prod_{i=0}^{c_{n^{\prime}}-1}\left(\theta_{i}^{n^{\prime}}(x)-y_{n^{\prime}}\right) \prod_{j=c_{n^{\prime}}+1}^{\ell}\left(y_{n^{\prime}}-\theta_{j}^{n^{\prime}}(x)\right)\right), \tag{I.25}
\end{equation*}
$$

where, as before, $\ell=a_{n^{\prime}}$ or $a_{n^{\prime}}-1$. Then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\|T\|_{1} \leq\left|\log \omega_{n^{\prime}}\right|+\sum_{i=1}^{c_{n^{\prime}}-1}\left\|\log \left(\theta_{i}^{n^{\prime}}(x)-y_{n^{\prime}}\right)\right\|_{1}+\sum_{j=c_{n^{\prime}}+1}^{\ell}\left\|\log \left(y_{n^{\prime}}-\theta_{j}^{n^{\prime}}(x)\right)\right\|_{1} \tag{I.26}
\end{equation*}
$$

Now for $0 \leq i \leq c_{n^{\prime}}-1, \log \left(\theta_{i}^{n^{\prime}}(x)-y_{n^{\prime}}\right)=\log \omega_{n^{\prime}}+\log \left(\left(\theta_{i}^{n^{\prime}}\right)^{-1}\left(y_{n^{\prime}}\right)-x\right)$, thus,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|\log \left(\theta_{i}^{n^{\prime}}(x)-y_{n^{\prime}}\right)\right\|_{1} \leq\left|\log \omega_{n^{\prime}}\right|+\left\|\log \left(\left(\theta_{i}^{n^{\prime}}\right)^{-1}\left(y_{n^{\prime}}\right)-x\right)\right\|_{1} . \tag{I.27}
\end{equation*}
$$

Now since $c_{n^{\prime}} \neq 0$ then $y_{n^{\prime}} \in\left(-\omega_{n^{\prime}}-c_{n^{\prime}},-\omega_{n^{\prime}}-c_{n^{\prime}}+1\right)$ and $\left(\theta_{i}^{n^{\prime}}\right)^{-1}\left(y_{n^{\prime}}\right) \in$ $\left(1-\omega_{n^{\prime}}^{-1}\left(1-c_{n^{\prime}}+i\right), 1+\omega_{n^{\prime}}^{-1}\left(c_{n^{\prime}}-i\right)\right)$. Using lemma 10 and the fact that $T$ is defined on $V_{0}^{n^{\prime}+1}$ we have:

$$
\begin{align*}
\left\|\log \left(\left(\theta_{i}^{n^{\prime}}\right)^{-1}\left(y_{n^{\prime}}\right)-x\right)\right\|_{1}= & |\log |\left(\theta_{i}^{n^{\prime}}\right)^{-1}\left(y_{n^{\prime}}\right)-1+\frac{1}{2} \omega_{n^{\prime}}^{-1} \| \\
& +\log \left|\left(\theta_{i}^{n^{\prime}}\right)^{-1}\left(y_{n^{\prime}}\right)-1+\frac{1}{2} \omega_{n^{\prime}}^{-1}\right| \\
& -\log \left(\left|\left(\theta_{i}^{n^{\prime}}\right)^{-1}\left(y_{n^{\prime}}\right)-1+\frac{1}{2} \omega_{n^{\prime}}^{-1}\right|-\frac{1}{2} \omega_{n^{\prime}}^{-1}-\delta\right) \tag{I.28}
\end{align*}
$$

We have that $\left(\theta_{i}^{n^{\prime}}\right)^{-1}\left(y_{n^{\prime}}\right)>1$, since $i \leq c_{n^{\prime}}-1$ then $\left(\theta_{i}^{n^{\prime}}\right)^{-1}\left(y_{n^{\prime}}\right)>1$ but $\left(\theta_{i}^{n^{\prime}}\right)^{-1}\left(y_{n^{\prime}}\right)$ could be arbitrarily close to $V_{0}^{n^{\prime}+1}$. However, following the above argument, if we assume a periodic code $\mathbf{c}$ then we can say there exists $\delta_{3}>0$ such that $\min _{n^{\prime}}\left|\left(\theta_{i}^{n^{\prime}}\right)^{-1}\left(y_{n^{\prime}}\right)-1-\delta\right|>\delta_{3}$, provided $\delta$ is chosen sufficiently small.

Now since $\left|\left(\theta_{i}^{n^{\prime}}\right)^{-1}\left(y_{n^{\prime}}\right)-1+\frac{1}{2} \omega_{n^{\prime}}^{-1}\right|<\omega_{n^{\prime}}^{-1}\left(c_{n^{\prime}}-\frac{1}{2}\right)<K$ for some constant $K>1$, we have that

$$
\begin{align*}
\left\|\log \left(\left(\theta_{i}^{n^{\prime}}\right)^{-1}\left(y_{n^{\prime}}\right)-x\right)\right\|_{1} & =\log \left(\frac{\max \left\{1,\left|\left(\theta_{i}^{n^{\prime}}\right)^{-1}\left(y_{n^{\prime}}\right)-1+\frac{1}{2} \omega_{n^{\prime}}^{-1}\right|^{2}\right\}}{\left|\left(\theta_{i}^{n^{\prime}}\right)^{-1}\left(y_{n^{\prime}}\right)-1+\frac{1}{2} \omega_{n^{\prime}}^{-1}\right|-\frac{1}{2} \omega_{n^{\prime}}^{-1}}\right) \\
& \leq \log \left(\frac{K^{2}}{\delta_{3}}\right) \tag{I.29}
\end{align*}
$$

So now we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\|T\|_{1}=\left|\log \omega_{n^{\prime}}\right|+\sum_{i=0}^{c_{n^{\prime}}-1}\left(\left|\log \omega_{n^{\prime}}\right|+\log \frac{K^{2}}{\delta_{3}}\right)+\sum_{j=c_{n^{\prime}}+1}^{\ell}\left\|\log \left(y_{n^{\prime}}-\theta_{j}^{n^{\prime}}(x)\right)\right\|_{1} . \tag{I.30}
\end{equation*}
$$

Writing for $c_{n^{\prime}}+1 \leq j \leq \ell, \log \left(y_{n^{\prime}}-\theta_{j}^{n^{\prime}}(x)\right)=\log \omega_{n^{\prime}}+\log \left(x-\left(\theta_{j}^{n^{\prime}}\right)^{-1}\left(y_{n^{\prime}}\right)\right)$ then $\left\|\log \left(y_{n^{\prime}}-\theta_{j}^{n^{\prime}}(x)\right)\right\|_{1} \leq\left|\log \omega_{n^{\prime}}\right|+\left\|\log \left(x-\left(\theta_{j}^{n^{\prime}}\right)^{-1}\left(y_{n^{\prime}}\right)\right)\right\|_{1}$, where again $y_{n^{\prime}} \in\left(-\omega_{n^{\prime}}-c_{n^{\prime}},-\omega_{n^{\prime}}-c_{n^{\prime}}+1\right)$ and $\left(\theta_{j}^{n^{\prime}}\right)^{-1}\left(y_{n^{\prime}}\right) \in\left(1-\omega_{n^{\prime}}^{-1}\left(1-c_{n^{\prime}}+j\right), 1+\right.$ $\left.\omega_{n^{\prime}}^{-1}\left(c_{n^{\prime}}-j\right)\right)$. Using lemma 10 we have:

$$
\begin{align*}
\| \log \left(x-\left(\theta_{j}^{n^{\prime}}\right)^{-1}\left(y_{n^{\prime}}\right) \|_{1}=\right. & |\log |\left(\theta_{j}^{n^{\prime}}\right)^{-1}\left(y_{n^{\prime}}\right)-1+\frac{1}{2} \omega_{n^{\prime}}^{-1} \| \\
& +\log \left|\left(\theta_{j}^{n^{\prime}}\right)^{-1}\left(y_{n^{\prime}}\right)-1+\frac{1}{2} \omega_{n^{\prime}}^{-1}\right| \\
& -\log \left(\left|\left(\theta_{j}^{n^{\prime}}\right)^{-1}\left(y_{n^{\prime}}\right)-1+\frac{1}{2} \omega_{n^{\prime}}^{-1}\right|-\frac{1}{2} \omega_{n^{\prime}}^{-1}-\delta\right) \tag{I.31}
\end{align*}
$$

and since $T$ is defined on $V_{0}^{n^{\prime}+1}$ we require that $\left(\theta_{j}^{n^{\prime}}\right)^{-1}\left(y_{n^{\prime}}\right)<1-\omega_{n^{\prime}}^{-1}-\delta$. Given that $j \geq c_{n^{\prime}}+1$, we have $\left(\theta_{j}^{n^{\prime}}\right)^{-1}\left(y_{n^{\prime}}\right) \leq 1-\omega_{n^{\prime}}^{-1}$ i.e. $\left(\theta_{j}^{n^{\prime}}\right)^{-1}\left(y_{n^{\prime}}\right)$ could be arbitrarily close to $V_{0}^{n^{\prime}+1}$. However, again, using the periodicity of $\mathbf{c}$, we can say that there exists $\delta_{4}>0$ such that $\min _{n^{\prime}}\left|1-\omega_{n^{\prime}}^{-1}-\delta-\left(\theta_{j}^{n^{\prime}}\right)^{-1}\left(y_{n^{\prime}}\right)\right|>\delta_{4}$, provided, as before, that $\delta>0$ is taken sufficiently small.

Finally $\left(\theta_{j}^{n^{\prime}}\right)^{-1}\left(y_{n^{\prime}}\right)-1+\frac{1}{2} \omega_{n^{\prime}}^{-1}>\left(\frac{1}{2}-\ell\right) \omega_{n^{\prime}}^{-1}$, hence $\left|\left(\theta_{j}^{n^{\prime}}\right)^{-1}\left(y_{n^{\prime}}\right)-1+\frac{1}{2} \omega_{n^{\prime}}^{-1}\right|<$ $\left(\ell-\frac{1}{2}\right) \omega_{n^{\prime}}^{-1}<K$, for some constant $K>1$, larger than the $K$ above. We then have, for $c_{n^{\prime}} \neq 0$ :

$$
\begin{align*}
\|T\|_{1} \leq & \max _{1 \leq m \leq p}\left|\log \omega_{m}\right|+\sum_{i=0}^{c_{n^{\prime}}-1}\left(\max _{1 \leq m \leq p}\left|\log \omega_{m}\right|+\log \frac{K^{2}}{\delta_{3}}\right) \\
& +\sum_{j=c_{n^{\prime}}+1}^{\ell}\left(\max _{1 \leq m \leq p}\left|\log \omega_{m}\right|+\log \frac{K^{2}}{\delta_{4}}\right)  \tag{I.32}\\
\leq & (1+\ell) \max _{1 \leq m \leq p}\left|\log \omega_{m}\right|+c_{n^{\prime}} \log \frac{K^{2}}{\delta_{3}}+\left(\ell-c_{n^{\prime}}\right)\left(|\log K|+\log \frac{K}{\delta_{4}}\right) \tag{I.33}
\end{align*}
$$

$$
\begin{equation*}
\leq L / 2 \tag{I.34}
\end{equation*}
$$

for some $L$ using the periodicity of $\omega_{n^{\prime}}$ to ensure that $\log K$ is bounded, as is $\log \omega_{m}$.

For all cases then we see that

$$
\begin{align*}
\left\|H^{n-k, 1}\right\| & =\|U\|_{1}+\|T\|_{1}  \tag{I.35}\\
& \leq L / 2+L / 2  \tag{I.36}\\
& \leq L, \tag{I.37}
\end{align*}
$$

for some $L>0$ independent of $k$ and $n$.

